

Mary Ann Cater 1790
THE

T R A V E L S

OF

LEMUEL GULLIVER,

INTO SEVERAL

REMOTE NATIONS

OF THE

W O R L D.

WHO WAS FIRST A

S U R G E O N,

AND THEN A

C A P T A I N

OF

SEVERAL SHIPS..

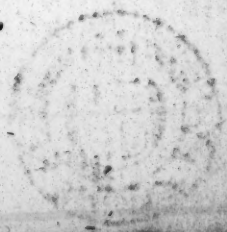
I N F O U R P A R T S.

ILLUSTRATED WITH COPPERPLATES.

EDINBURGH:

PRINTED FOR C. ELLIOT.

M.DCC.LXXXVII.



T

CHA
and
shi
sho
and

CHA
al
fin
be
la
H
ta

CHA
no
T
au
di

CH
en
v
r
th

CH
g
c
R
P
in

n



T H E C O N T E N T S.

	Page
T H E publisher to the reader	11
Gulliver's letter to his cousin Sympson	13

P A R T I.

A VOYAGE to LILLIPUT.

CHAP. I. The author gives some account of himself and family. His first inducements to travel. He is shipwrecked, and swims for his life; gets safe on shore in the country of Lilliput; is made a prisoner, and carried up the country, 19

CHAP. II. The emperor of Lilliput, attended by several of the nobility, comes to see the author in his confinement. The emperor's person and habit described. Learned men appointed to teach the author their language. He gains favour by his mild disposition. His pockets are searched, and his sword and pistols taken from him, 31

CHAP. III. The author diverts the emperor, and his nobility of both sexes, in a very uncommon manner. The diversions of the court of Lilliput described. The author has his liberty granted him, upon certain conditions, 42

CHAP. IV. Mildendo, the metropolis of Lilliput, described, together with the Emperor's palace. A conversation between the author and a principal secretary, concerning the affairs of that empire. The author's offers to serve the Emperor in his wars, 51

CHAP. V. The author, by an extraordinary stratagem, prevents an invasion. A high title of honour is conferred upon him. Ambassadors arrive from the Emperor of Blefuscu, and sue for peace. The Empress's apartment on fire by an accident; the author instrumental in saving the rest of the palace, 57

	Page
CHAP. VI. Of the inhabitants of Lilliput ; their learning, laws, and customs, the manner of educating their children. The author's way of living in that country. His vindication of a great lady, - - -	65
CHAP. VII. The author, being informed of a design to accuse him of high-treason, maketh his escape to Blefuscu. His reception there, - - -	76
CHAP. VIII. The author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Blefuscu ; and, after some difficulties, returns safe to his native country, - - -	86

P A R T II.

A VOYAGE to BROBDINGNAG.

CHAP. I. A great storm described, the long boat sent to fetch water, the author goes with it to discover the country. He is left on shore, is seized by one of the natives and carried to a farmer's house. His reception, with several accidents that happened there. A description of the inhabitants, - - -	94
CHAP. II. A description of the farmer's daughter. The author carried to a market-town, and then to the metropolis. The particulars of his journey, - - -	109
CHAP. III. The author sent for to court. The Queen buys him of his master the farmer, and presents him to the king. He disputes with his Majesty's great scholars. An apartment at court provided for the author. He is in high favour with the queen. He stands up for the honour of his own country. His quarrels with the queen's dwarf, - - -	115
CHAP. IV. The country described. A proposal for correcting modern maps. The king's palace, and some account of the metropolis. The author's way of travelling. The chief temple described, - - -	127
CHAP. V. Several adventures that happened to the author. The execution of a criminal. The author shews his skill in navigation, - - -	133
CHAP.	

THE CONTENTS.

	Page
CHAP. VI. Several contrivances of the author to please the king and queen. He shews his skill in music. The king inquires into the state of England, which the author relates to him. The king's observation thereon,	144
CHAP. VII. The author's love of his country. He makes a proposal of much advantage to the king, which is rejected. The king's great ignorance in politics. The learning of that country very imperfect and confined. The laws, and military affairs, and parties in the state,	154
CHAP. VIII. The king and queen make a progress to the frontiers. The author attends them. The manner in which he leaves the country very particularly related. He returns to England,	162

PART III.

A VOYAGE TO LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGGNAGG, GLUBBDUDBRIB, and JAPAN.

CHAP. I. The author sets out on his third voyage, is taken by pirates. The malice of a Dutchman. His arrival at an island. He is received into Laputa,	176
CHAP. II. The humours and dispositions of the Laputians described. An account of their learning. Of the king and his court. The author's reception there. The inhabitants subject to fear and disquietudes. An account of the women,	183
CHAP. III. A phenomenon solved by modern philosophy and astronomy. The Laputians great improvements in the latter. The king's method of suppressing insurrections,	193
CHAP. IV. The author leaves Laputa, is conveyed to Balnibarbi, arrives at the metropolis. A description of the metropolis and the country adjoining. The author hospitably received by a great lord. His conversation with that lord,	199

	Page
CHAP. V. The author permitted to see the grand academy of Lagado. The academy largely described. The arts wherein the professors employ themselves;	206
CHAP. VI. A further account of the academy. The author proposes some improvements, which are honourably received,	215
CHAP. VII. The author leaves Lagado, arrives at Maldonada. No ship ready. He takes a short voyage to Glubbdubdrib. His reception by the governor	222
CHAP. VIII. A further account of Glubbdubdrib. Ancient and modern history corrected	227
CHAP. IX. The author returns to Maldonada. Sails to the kingdom of Luggnagg. The author confined. He is sent for to court. The manner of his admittance. The king's great lenity to his subjects,	234
CHAP. X. The Luggnaggians commended. A particular description of the Struldbrugs, with many conversations between the author and some eminent persons upon that subject,	238
CHAP. XI. The author leaves Luggnagg, and sails to Japan. From thence he returns in a Dutch ship to Amsterdam, and from Amsterdam to England,	248

PART IV.

A VOYAGE to the Country of the HOUYHNHMS.

CHAP. I. The author sets out as captain of a ship. His men conspire against him, confine him a long time to his cabin, set him on shore in an unknown land. He travels up the country. The yahoos, a strange sort of animal, described. The author meets two Houyhnhnms,	253
CHAP. II. The author conducted by a Houyhnhnm to his house. The house described. The author's reception. The food of the Houyhnhnms. The author in distress for want of meat, is at last relieved. His manner of feeding in this country,	261
CHAP.	

THE CONTENTS.

vii

Page

CHAP. III. The author studies to learn the language; The Houyhnhnm, his master, assists in teaching him. The language described. Several Houyhnhnms of quality come out of curiosity to see the author. He gives his master a short account of his voyage, 268

CHAP. IV. The Houyhnhnms notion of truth and falsehood. The author's discourse disapproved by his master. The author gives a more particular account of himself, and the accidents of his voyage, - 275

CHAP. V. The author, at his master's command, informs him of the state of England. The causes of war among the princes of Europe. The author begins to explain the English constitution, - 281

CHAP. VI. A continuation of the state of England under queen Anne. The character of a first minister of state in European courts, - 289

CHAP. VII. The author's great love of his native country. His master's observations upon the constitution and administration of England, as described by the author, with parallel cases and comparisons. His master's observations upon human nature, - 297

CHAP. VIII. The author relates several particulars of the Yahoos. The great virtues of the Houyhnhnms. The education and exercise of their youth. Their general assembly. - 306

CHAP. IX. A grand debate at the general assembly of the Houyhnhnms, and how it was determined. The learning of the Houyhnhnms. Their buildings. Their manner of burials. The defectiveness of their language, - 313

CHAP. X. The author's œconomy, and happy life among the Houyhnhnms. His great improvement in virtue, by conversing with them. Their conversations. The author hath notice given him by his master, that he must depart from the country. He falls into a swoon for grief, but submits. He contrives and finishes a canoe by the help of a fellow-servant, and puts to sea at a venture, - 319

CHAP.

CHAP. XI. The author's dangerous voyage. He arrives at New-Holland, hoping to settle there. Is wounded with an arrow from one of the natives. Is seized and carried by force into a Portuguese ship. The great civilities of the captain. The author arrives at England, - - - 328

CHAP. XII. The author's veracity. His design in publishing this work. His censure of those travellers who swerve from the truth. The author clears himself from any sinister ends in writing. An objection answered. The method of planting colonies. His native country commended. The right of the crown to those countries described by the author is justified. The difficulty of conquering them. The author takes his last leave of the reader; proposeth his manner of living for the future; gives good advice, and concludeth, - - - 337

T H R E E P O E M S.

To Quinbus Flestrin, the Man-Mountain: a Lilliputian Ode, - - - 345

The Lamentation of Glumdalclitch for the loss of Gildrig: a Pastoral, - - - 347

Mary Gulliver to Capt. Lemuel Gulliver, - 349

Page
328
337
345
f
347
349

N. B. These voyages are intended as a moral political Romance—to correct vice, by showing its deformity, in opposition to the beauty of virtue; and to amend the false systems of Philosophy, by pointing out the errors, and applying salutary means to avoid them.

ORRERY.

I

TH

AL

Be

T H E

P U B L I S H E R to the R E A D E R.

THE author of these travels, Mr Lemuel Gulliver, is my ancient and intimate friend ; there is likewise some relation between us on the mother's side. About three years ago, Mr Gulliver growing weary of the concourse of curious people coming to him at his house in Redriff, made a small purchase of land, with a convenient house, near Newark in Nottinghamshire, his native country ; where he now lives retired, yet in good esteem among his neighbours.

Although Mr Gulliver was born in Nottinghamshire, where his father dwelt, yet I have heard him say, his family came from Oxfordshire ; to confirm which, I have observed in the church-yard at Banbury, in that county, several tombs and monuments of the Gullivers.

Before he quitted Redriff, he left the custody of the following papers in my hands, with the liberty to dispose of them as I should think fit. I have carefully perused them three times : The style is very plain and simple ; and the only fault I find is, that the author, after the manner of travellers, is a little too circumstantial. There is an air of truth apparent through the whole ; and indeed the author was so distinguished for his veracity, that it became a sort of a proverb among his neighbours at Redriff, when any one affirmed a thing, to say it was as true as if Mr Gulliver had spoken it.

By

By the advice of several worthy persons, to whom, with the author's permission, I communicated these papers, I now venture to send them into the world; hoping they may be, at least for some time, a better entertainment to our young noblemen, than the common scribbles of politics and party.

This volume would have been at least twice as large if I had not made bold to strike out innumerable passages relating to the winds and tides, as well as to the variations and bearings in the several voyages, together with the minute descriptions of the management of the ship in storms in the style of sailors; likewise the account of longitudes and latitudes; wherein I have reason to apprehend, that Mr Gulliver may be a little dissatisfied: But I was resolved to fit the work, as much as possible, to the general capacity of readers. However, if my own ignorance in sea affairs shall have led me to commit some mistakes, I alone am answerable for them: And if any traveller hath a curiosity to see the whole work at large, as it came from the hand of the author, I will be ready to gratify him;

As for any further particulars relating to the author, the reader will receive satisfaction from the first pages of the book.

RICHARD SYMPSON.

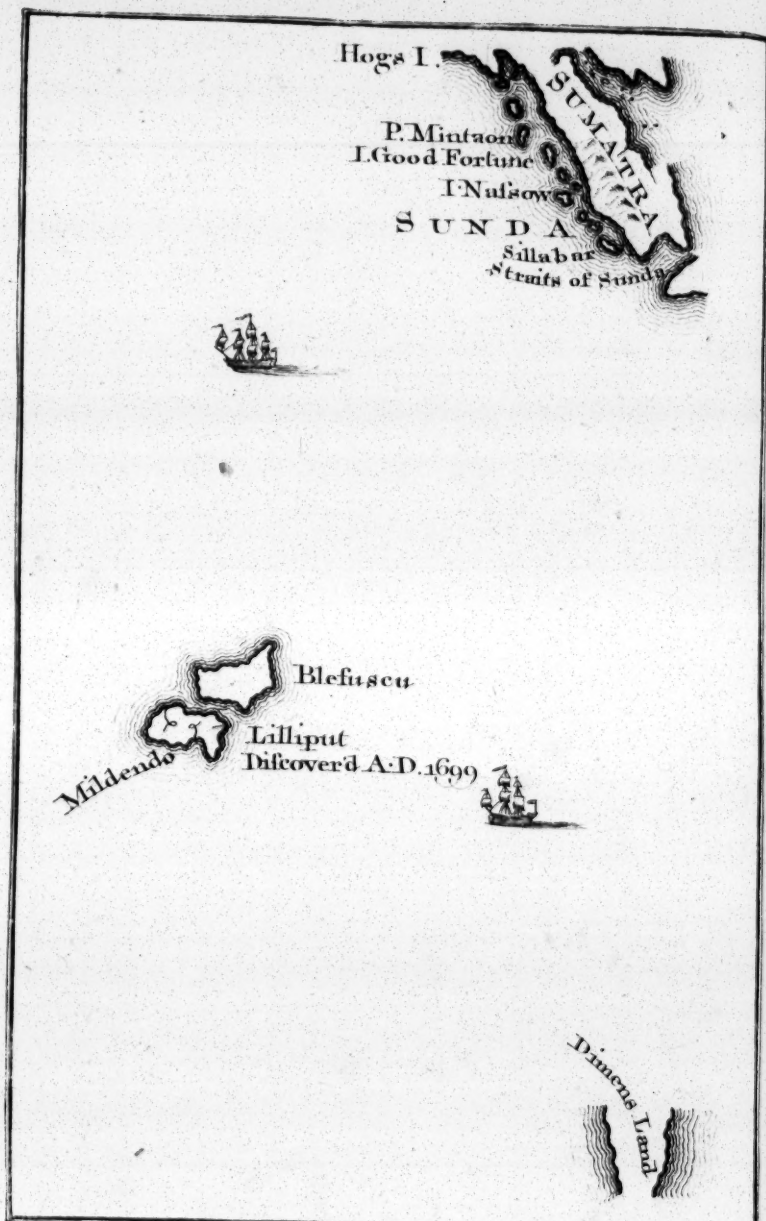
nom,
ated
into
some
no-
and

arge
rable
well
veral
tions
n the
ongi-
on to
e dif.
k, as
read-
a af-
akes,
y tra-
rk at
or, I

e au-
n the

son.

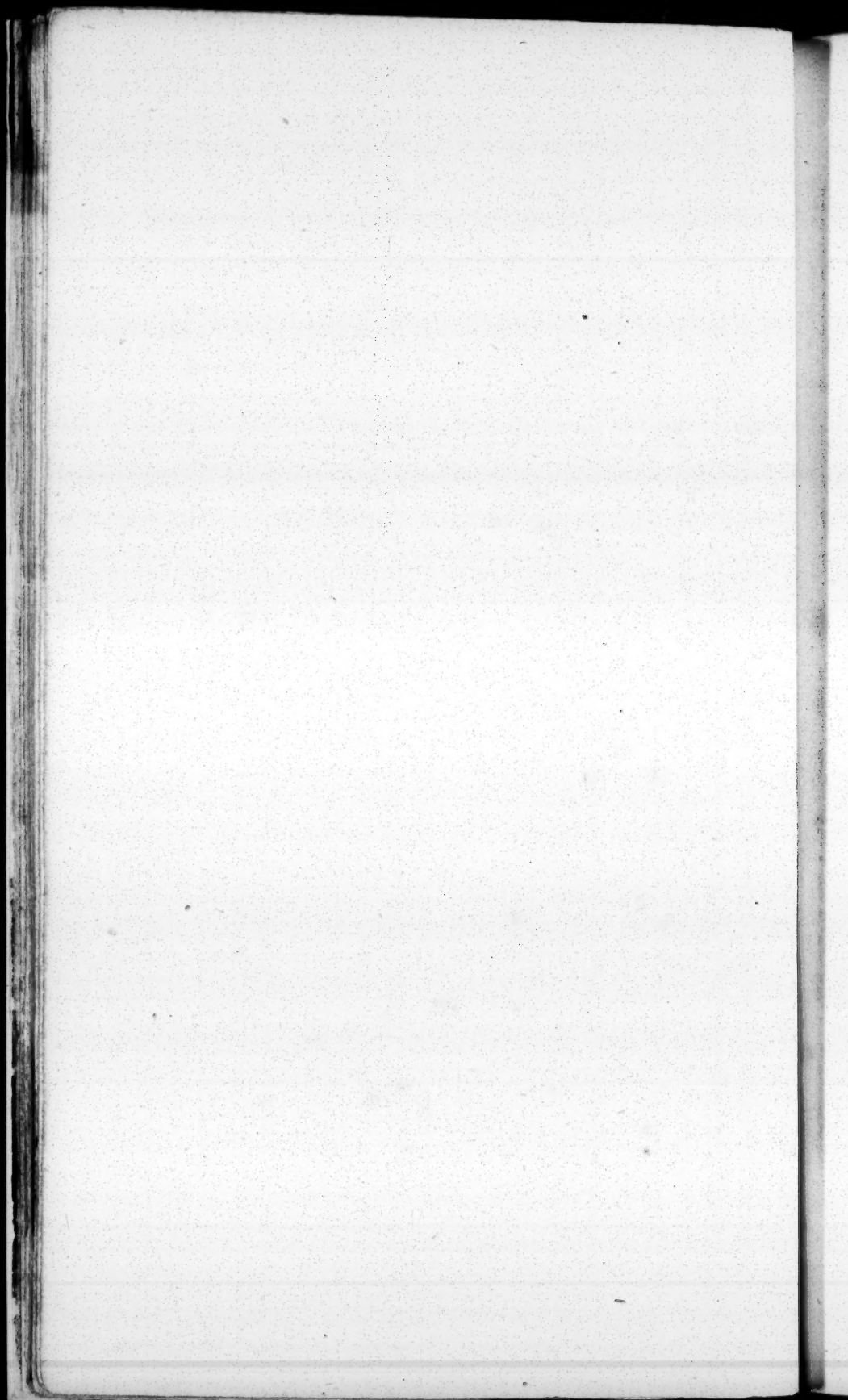
A

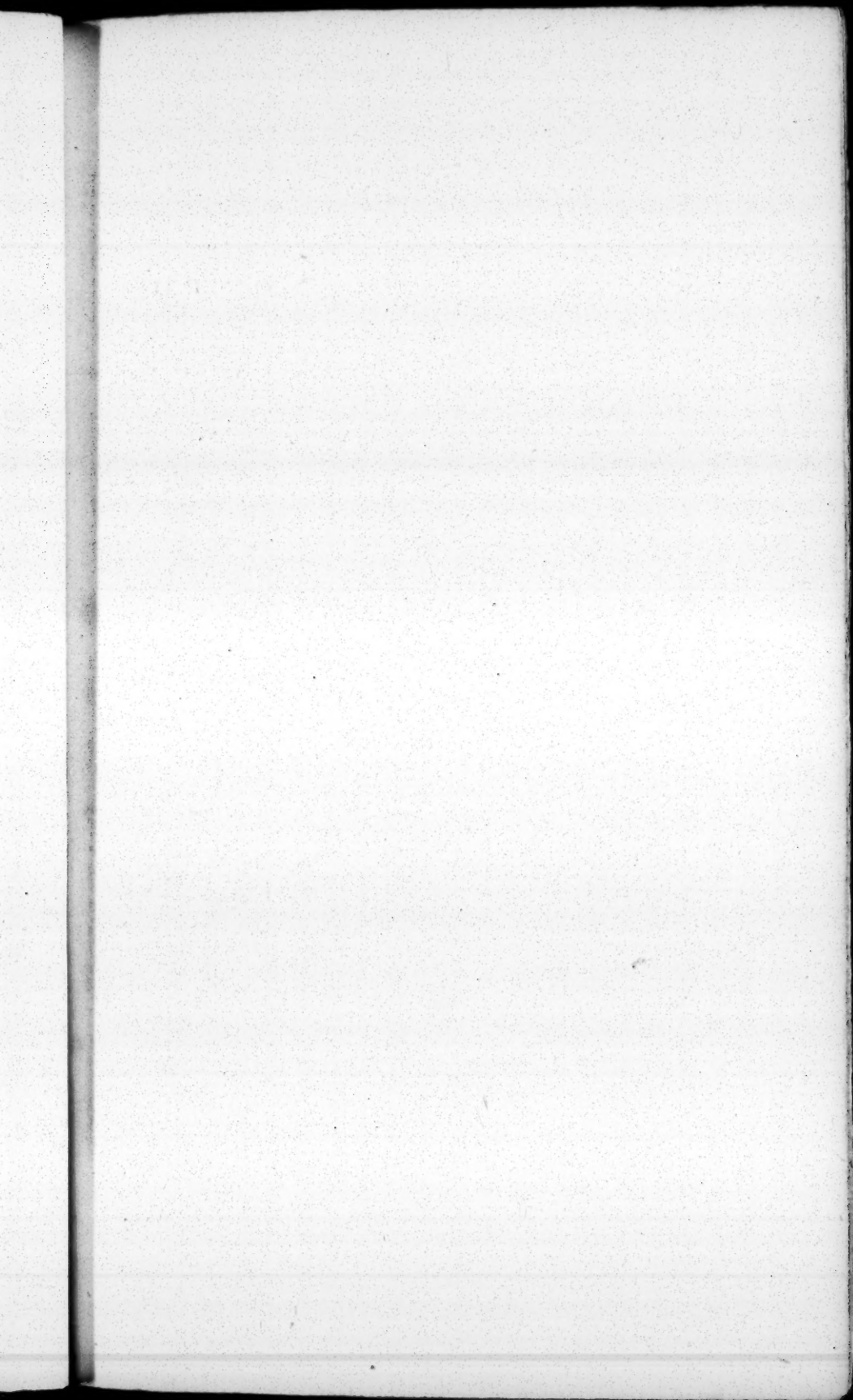


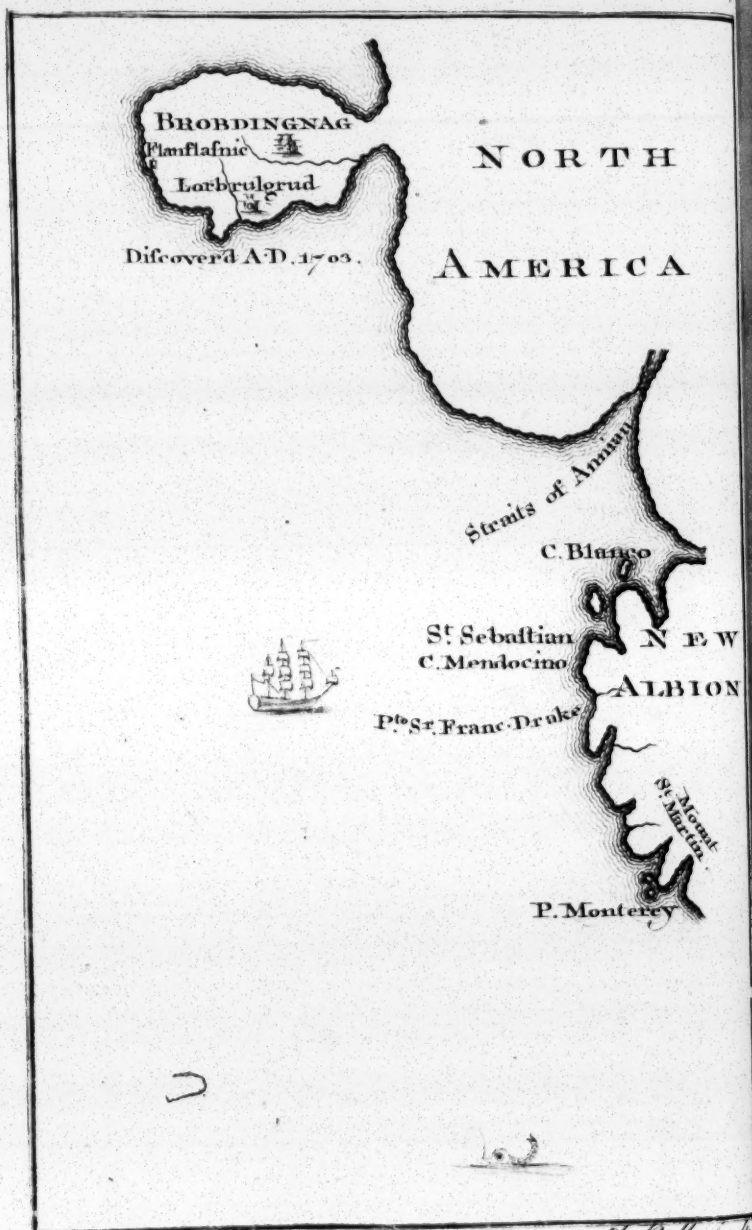
A. Bell Sculp.



A. Bell sculp.

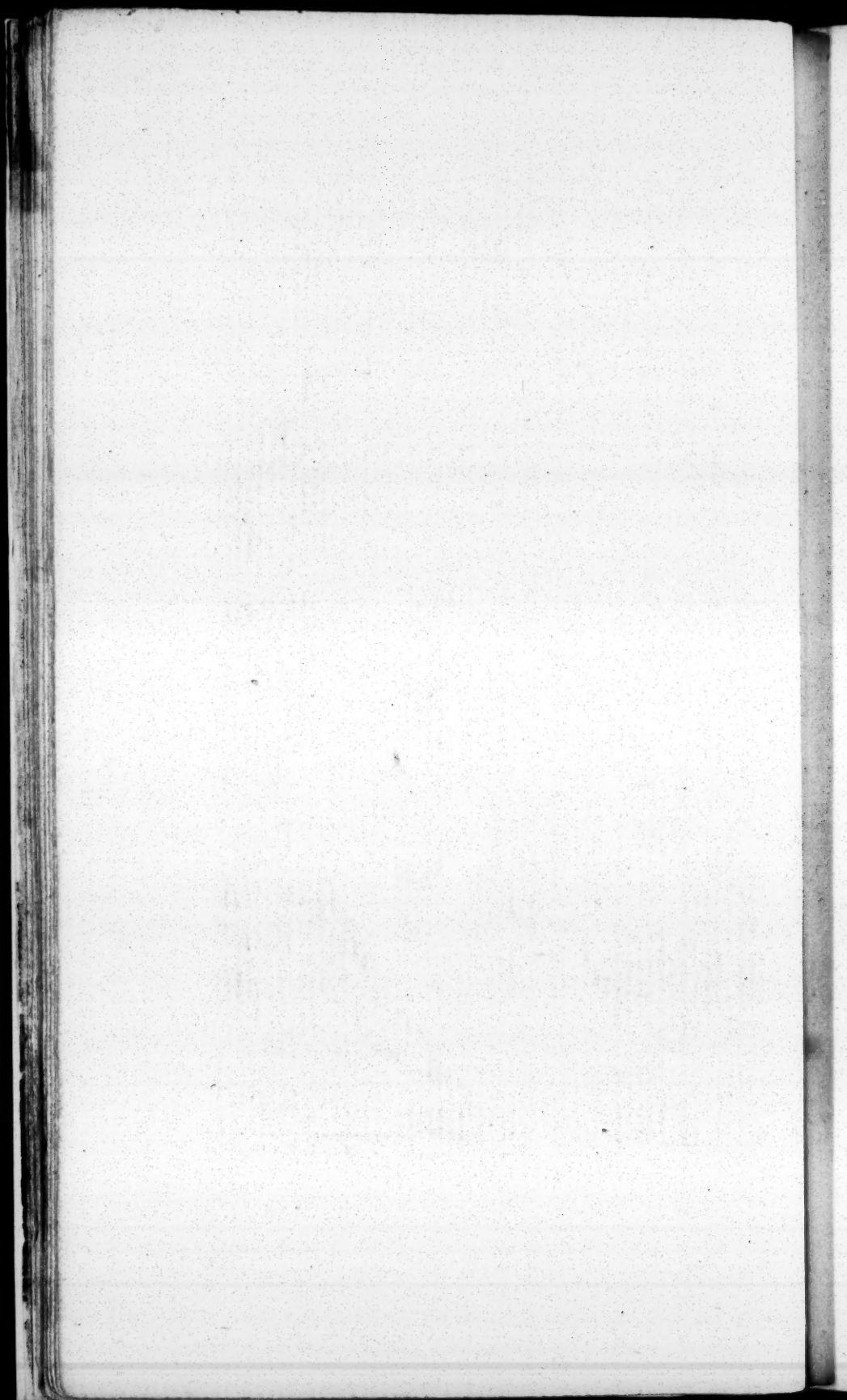


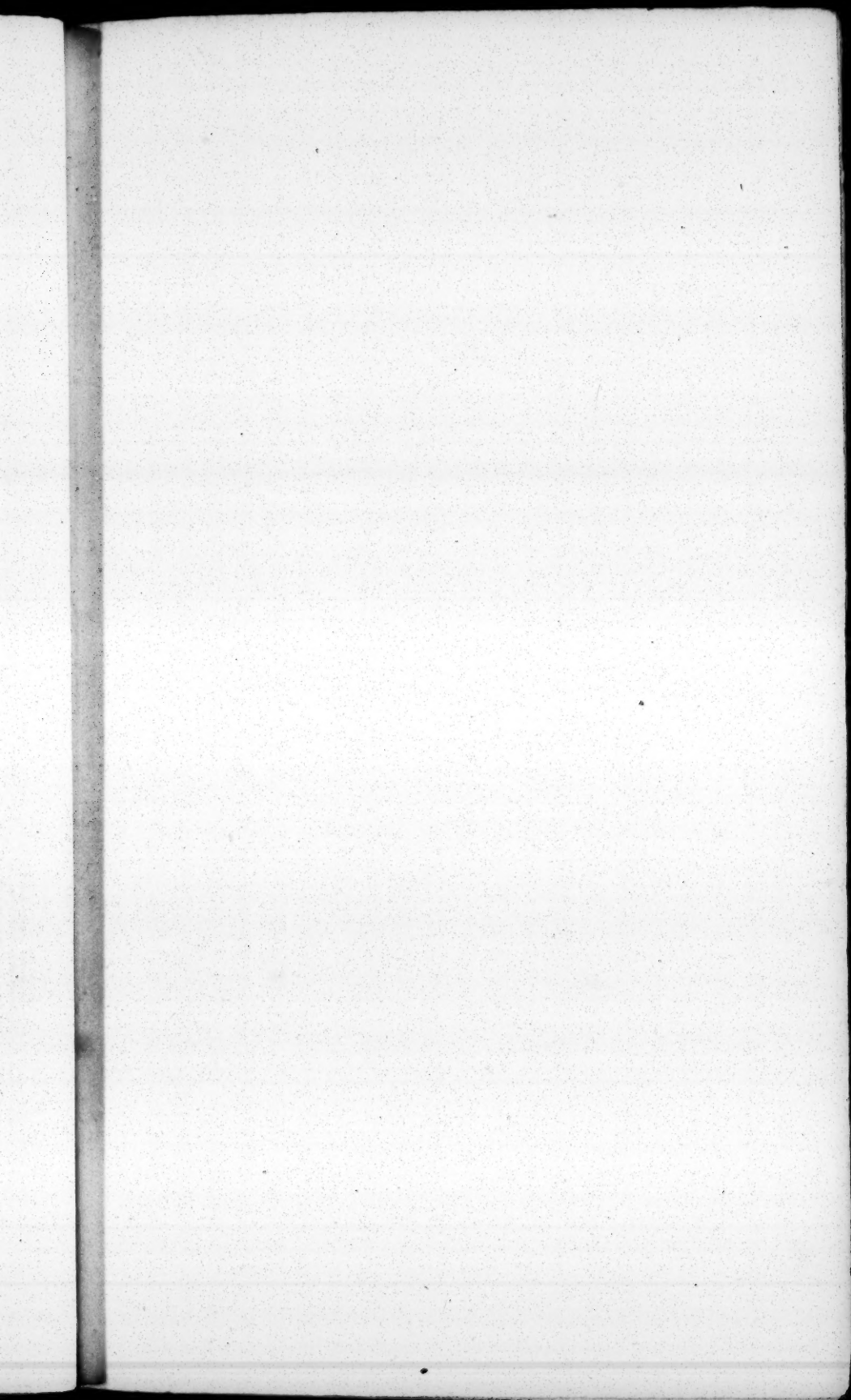






A. Bell sculp.



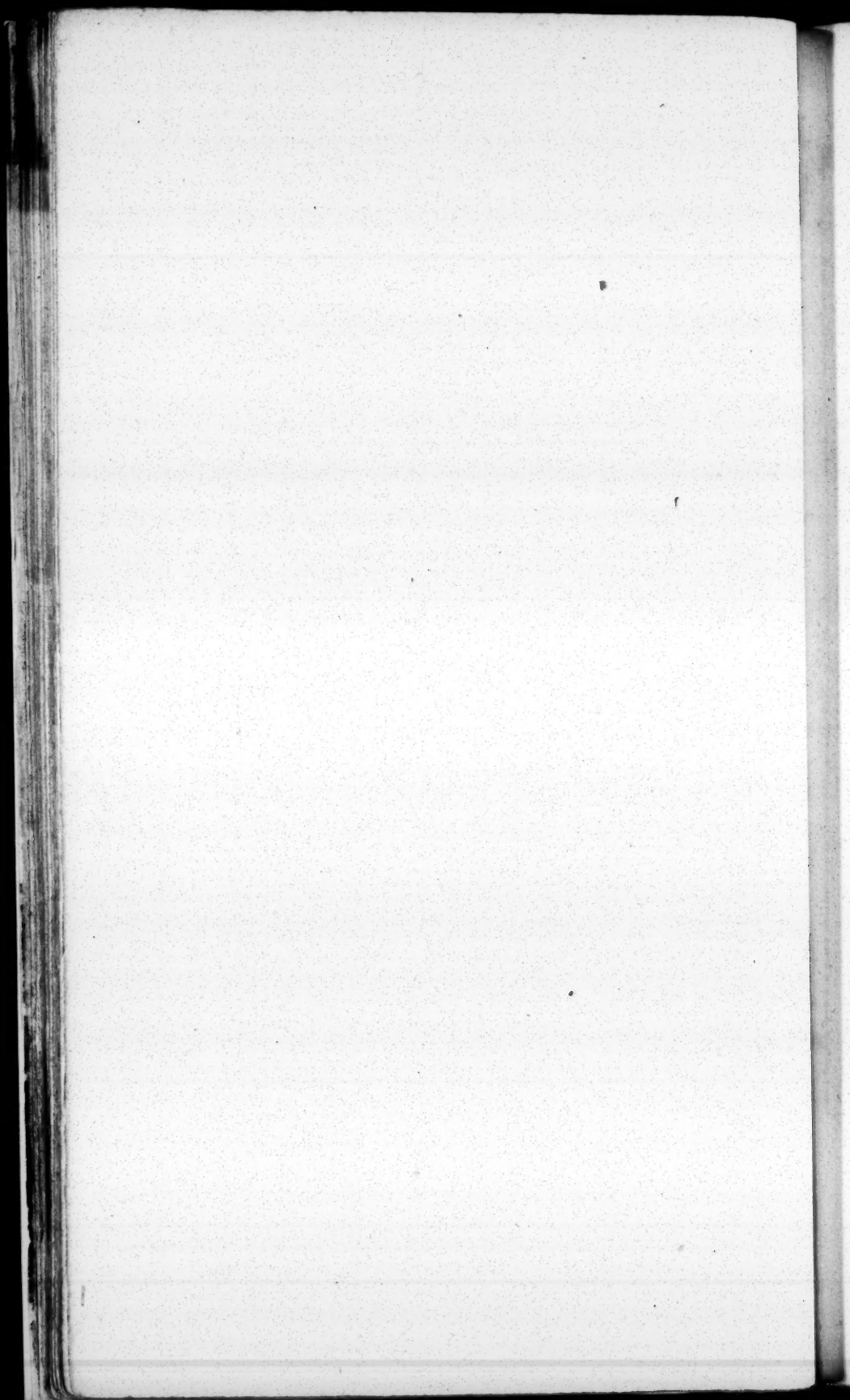


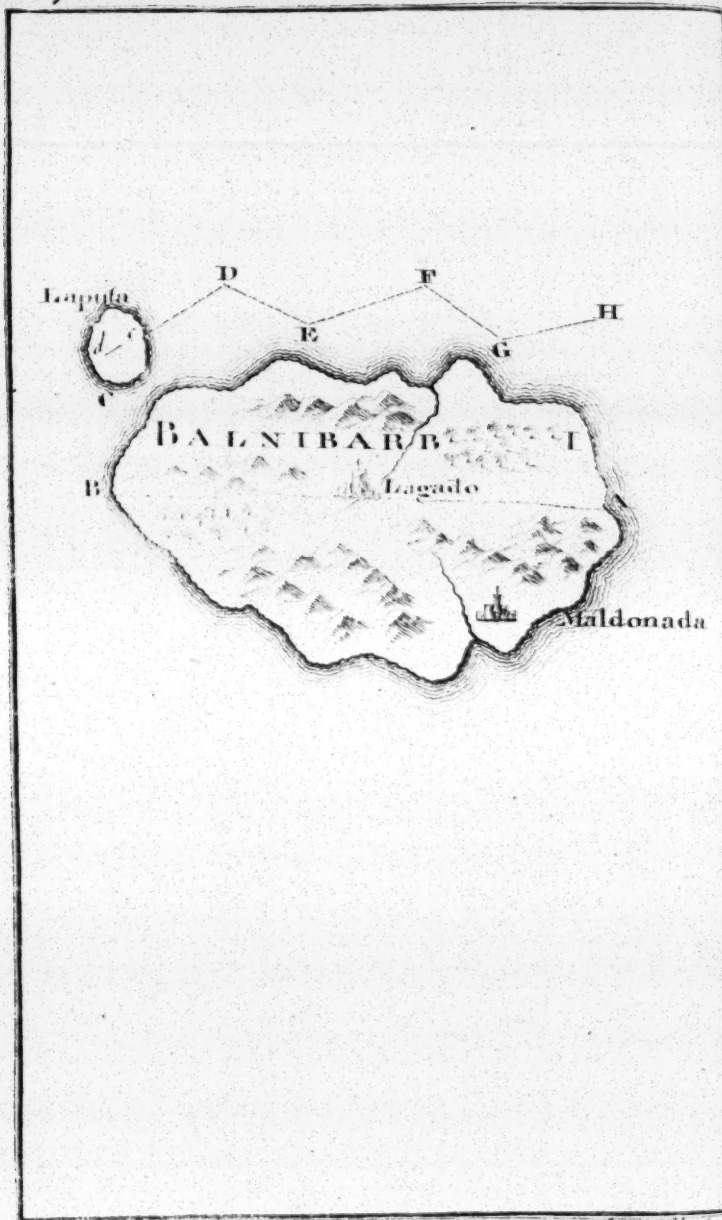


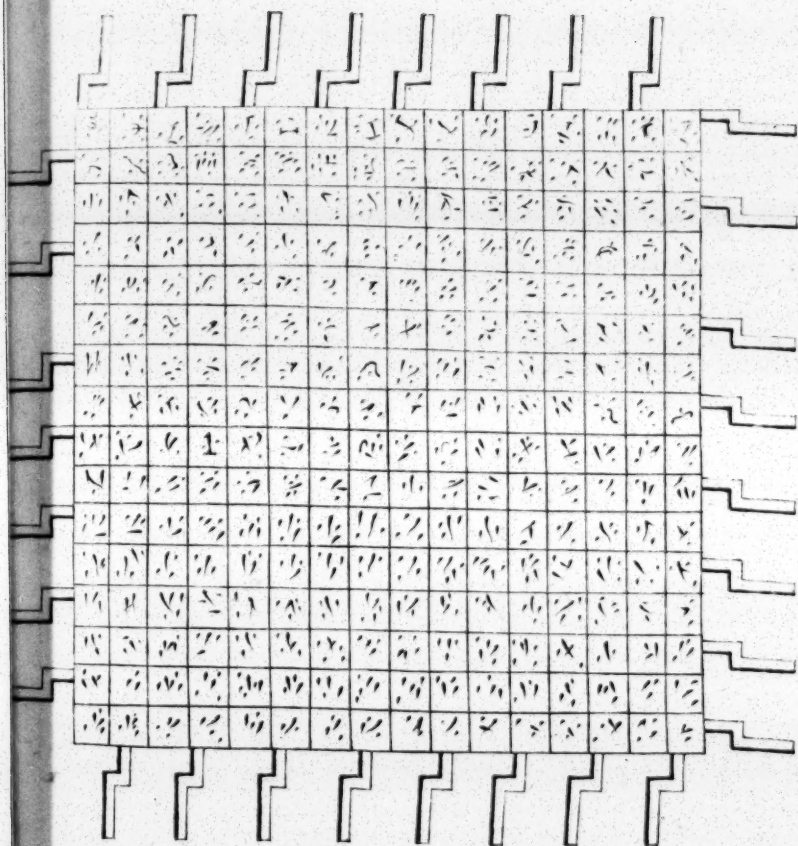
A. Bell

[illegible]

A. Bell Sculp.



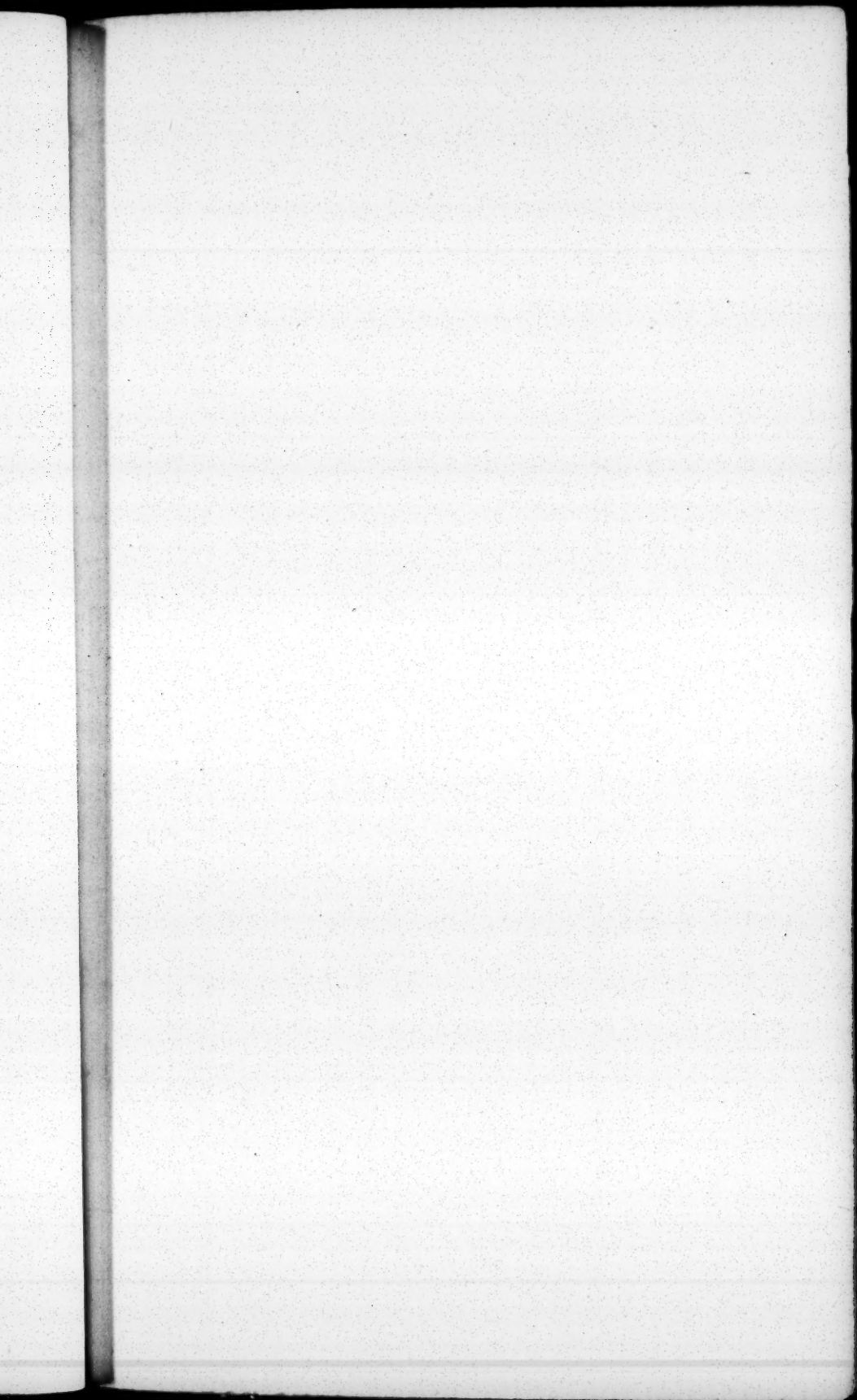


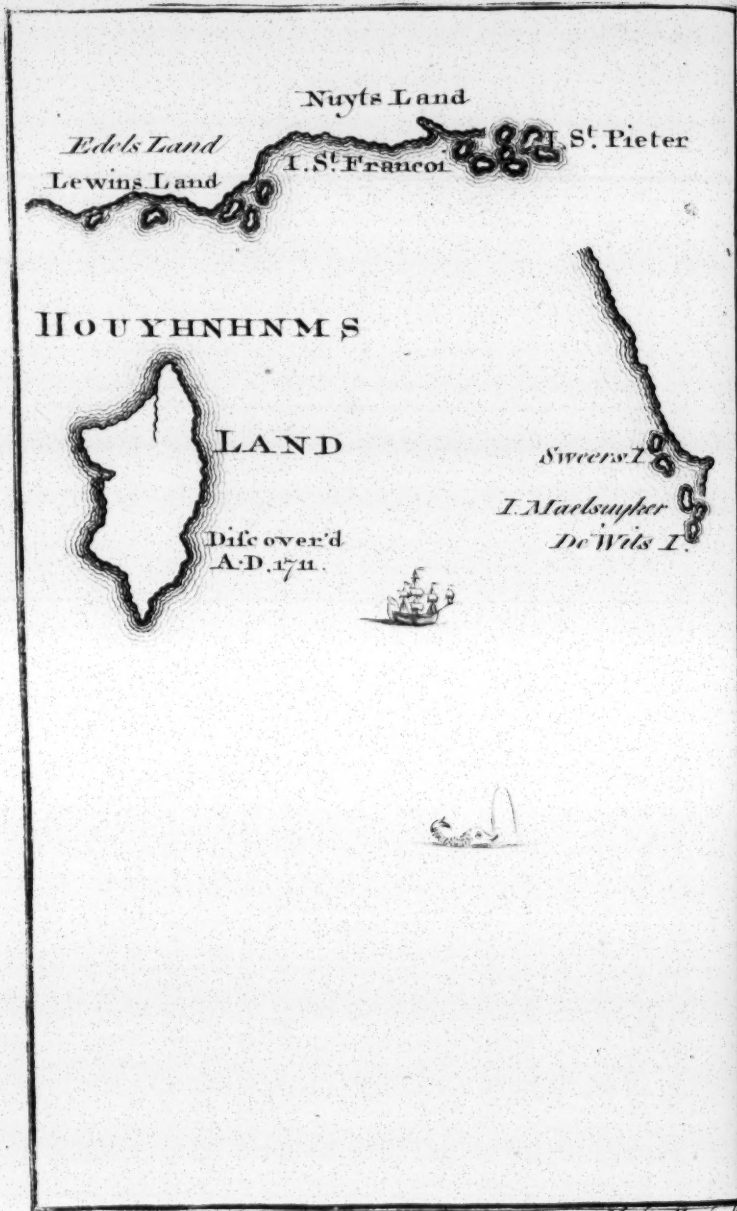


nada

Bell. sculp.

A. Bell. sculp.







A. Bell Sculp.

CA

I

an

liff

vel

of

the

his

no

thi

thi

I d

cul

An

I d

hu

to

fo

con

A

L E T T E R

FROM

CAPT. GULLIVER TO HIS COUSIN SYMPSON.

I HOPE you will be ready to own publicly, whenever you shall be called to it, that by your great and frequent urgency you prevailed on me to publish a very loose and uncorrect account of my travels, with directions to hire some young gentlemen of either university to put them in order and correct the style, as my cousin Dampier did by my advice in his book called *A Voyage round the World*. But I do not remember I gave you power to consent that any thing should be omitted, and much less that any thing should be inserted: Therefore, as to the latter, I do here renounce every thing of that kind; particularly a paragraph about her Majesty the late Queen Anne, of most pious and glorious memory, although I did reverence and esteem her more than any of the human species. But you or your interpolator ought to have considered, that as it was not my inclination, so was it not decent to praise any animal of our composition before my master Houyhnhnm. And

B be.

besides, the fact was altogether false: for to my knowledge, being in England during some part of her Majesty's reign, she did govern by a chief minister; nay, even by two successively; the first whereof was the Lord of Godolphin, and the second the Lord of Oxford; so that you have made me say the thing which was not. Likewise, in the account of the Academy of Projectors, and several passages of my Discourse to my master Houyhnhnm, you have either omitted some material circumstances, or minced or changed them in such a manner, that I do hardly know mine own work. When I formerly hinted to you something of this in a letter, you were pleased to answer, that you were afraid of giving offence; that people in power were very watchful over the press; and apt not only to interpret, but to punish, every thing which looked like an innuendo (as I think you called it). But pray, how could that which I spoke so many years ago, and at above five thousand leagues distance, in another reign, be applied to any of the Yahoos, who now are said to govern the herd, especially at a time when I little thought on, or feared the unhappiness of living under them. Have not I the most reason to complain, when I see these very Yahoos carried by Houyhnhnms in a vehicle, as if these were brutes and those the rational creatures? And indeed to avoid so monstrous and detestable a sight was one principal motive of my retirement hither.

Thus much I thought proper to tell you in relation to yourself, and to the trust I reposed in you.

I do, in the next place, complain of my own great want of judgment, in being prevailed upon by the intreaties and false reasonings of you and some others, very much against mine own opinion, to suffer my Travels to be published. Pray bring to your

mind

mind how often I desired you to consider, when you insisted on the motive of public good, that the Yahoos were a species of animals utterly incapable of amendment by precept or examples: And so it hath proved; for, instead of seeing a full stop put to all abuses and corruptions, at least in this little island, as I had reason to expect, behold, after above six months warning, I cannot learn that my book hath produced one single effect according to mine intentions. I desired you would but let me know by a letter, when party and faction were extinguished; judges learned and upright; pleaders honest and modest, with some tincture of common sense; and Smithfield blazing with pyramids of law-books; the young nobility's education entirely changed; the physicians banished; the female Yahoos abounding in virtue, honour, truth, and good sense; courts and levees of great ministers thoroughly weeded and swept; wit, merit, and learning rewarded; all disgracers of the press in prose and verse condemned to eat nothing but their own cotton, and quench their thirst with their own ink. These, and a thousand other reformations, I firmly counted upon by your encouragement; as indeed they were plainly deducible from the precepts delivered in my book. And it must be owned, that seven months were a sufficient time to correct every vice and folly to which Yahoos are subject, if their natures had been capable of the least disposition to virtue or wisdom. Yet so far have you been from answering mine expectation in any of your letters, that, on the contrary, you are loading our carrier every week with libels, and keys, and reflexions, and memoirs, and second parts; wherein I see myself accused of reflecting upon great state-folks, of degrading human nature (for so they have still the confidence to style it), and of abusing

the female sex. I find likewise, that the writers of those bundles are not agreed among themselves; for some of them will not allow me to be author of mine own Travels, and others make me author of books to which I am wholly a stranger.

I find likewise, that your printer hath been so careless as to confound the times, and mistake the dates of my several voyages and returns; neither assigning the true year, or the true month, or day of the month: And I hear the original manuscript is all destroyed since the publication of my book. Neither have I any copy left; however, I have sent you some corrections which you may insert if ever there should be a second edition: And yet I cannot stand to them, but shall leave that matter to my judicious and candid readers to adjust it as they please.

I hear some of our sea Yahoos find fault with my sea-language, as not proper in many parts, nor now in use. I cannot help it. In my first voyages while I was young, I was instructed by the oldest mariners, and learned to speak as they did. But I have since found that the sea Yahoos are apt, like the land ones, to become new-fangled in their words which the latter change every year; insomuch, as I remember upon each return to mine own country their old dialect was so altered, that I could hardly understand the new. And I observe, when any Yahoo comes from London out of curiosity to visit me at mine own house, we neither of us are able to deliver our conceptions in a manner intelligible to the other.

If the censure of Yahoos could any way affect me, I should have great reason to complain, that some of them are so bold as to think my book of Travels a mere fiction out of mine own brain; and

have gone so far as to drop hints, that the Houyhnhnms and Yahoos have no more existence than the inhabitants of Utopia.

Indeed I must confess, that as to the people of Lilliput, Brobdingrag, (for so the word should have been spelt, and not erroneously Brobdingnag), and Laputa, I have never yet heard of any Yahoo so presumptuous as to dispute their being, or the facts I have related concerning them; because the truth immediately strikes every reader with conviction. And is there less probability in my account of the Houyhnhnms or Yahoos, when it is manifest, as to the latter, there are so many thousands even in this city who only differ from their brother brutes in Houyhnhnm-land, because they use a sort of jabber, and do not go naked. I wrote for their amendment, and not their approbation. The united praise of the whole race would be of less consequence to me, than the neighing of those two degenerate Houyhnhnms I keep in my stable; because from these, degenerate as they are, I still improve in some virtues, without any mixture of vice.

Do these miserable animals presume to think that I am so far degenerated as to defend my veracity? Yahoo as I am, it is well known through all Houyhnhnm-land, that by the instructions and example of my illustrious master, I was able in the compass of two years (although, I confess, with the utmost difficulty) to remove that infernal habit of lying, shuffling, deceiving, and equivocating, so deeply rooted in the very souls of all my species; especially the Europeans.

I have other complaints to make upon this vexatious occasion; but I forbear troubling myself or you any further. I must freely confess, that since my last return, some corruptions of my Yahoo nature

have revived in me by conversing with a few of your species, and particularly those of mine own family, by an unavoidable necessity; else I should never have attempted so absurd a project as that of reforming the Yahoo race in this kingdom; but I have now done with all such visionary schemes for ever.

April 2. 1727.

T R A

T R A V E L S.

P A R T I.

A VOYAGE TO LILLIPUT.

C H A P. I.

The Author giveth some account of himself and family; his first inducements to travel. He is shipwrecked, and swims for his life; gets safe on shore in the country of Lilliput; is made a prisoner, and carried up the country.

MY father had a small estate in Nottinghamshire; I was the third of five sons. He sent me to Emanuel college in Cambridge at fourteen years old, where I resided three years, and applied myself close to my studies: But the charge of maintaining me (although I had a very scanty allowance) being too great for a narrow fortune, I was bound apprentice to Mr James Bates, an eminent surgeon in London, with whom I continued four years; and my father now and then sending
me

me small sums of money, I laid them out in learning navigation and other parts of the mathematics useful to those who intend to travel, as I always believed it would be some time or other my fortune to do. When I left Mr Bates, I went down to my father; where, by the assistance of him and my uncle John, and some other relations, I got forty pounds, and a promise of thirty pounds a-year to maintain me at Leyden: There I studied physick two years and seven months, knowing it would be useful in long voyages.

Soon after my return from Leyden, I was recommended by my good master Mr Bates, to be surgeon to the *Swallow*, Captain Abraham Pannel commander; with whom I continued three years and a half, making a voyage or two into the Levant and some other parts. When I came back I resolved to settle in London, to which Mr Bates, my master, encouraged me; and by him I was recommended to several patients. I took part of a small house in the Old-Jewry; and being advised to alter my condition, I married Mrs Mary Burton, second daughter to Mr Edmond Burton hosier in Newgate-Street, with whom I received four hundred pounds for a portion.

But my good Mr Bates dying in two years after, and I having few friends, my business began to fail; for my conscience would not suffer me to imitate the bad practice of too many among my brethren. Having therefore consulted with my wife and some of my acquaintance, I determined to go again to sea. I was surgeon successively in two ships, and made several voyages, for six years, to the East and West Indies; by which I got some addition to my fortune. My hours of leisure I spent in reading the best authors ancient and modern, being always provided with a good number of books; and, when

I was ashore, in observing the manners and dispositions of the people, as well as learning their language; wherein I had a great facility by the strength of my memory.

The last of these voyages not proving very fortunate, I grew weary of the sea, and intended to stay at home with my wife and family. I removed from the Old-Jewry to Fetter-Lane, and from thence to Wapping, hoping to get business among the sailors; but it would not turn to account. After three years expectation that things would mend, I accepted an advantageous offer from Captain William Pritchard, master of the *Antelope*, who was making a voyage to the South-Sea. We set sail from Bristol, May the 4th, 1699; and our voyage at first was very prosperous.

It would not be proper, for some reasons, to trouble the reader with the particulars of our adventures in those seas: Let it suffice to inform him, that in our passage from thence to the East Indies, we were driven by a violent storm to the north-west of Van Diemen's land. By an observation we found ourselves in the latitude of 30 degrees 2 minutes south. Twelve of our crew were dead by immoderate labour and ill food; the rest were in a very weak condition. On the fifth of November, which was the beginning of summer in those parts, the weather being very hazy, the seamen espied a rock within half a cable's length of the ship; but the wind was so strong that we were driven directly upon it, and immediately split. Six of the crew, of whom I was one, having let down the boat into the sea, made a shift to get clear of the ship and the rock. We rowed, by my computation, about three leagues, until we were able to work no longer, being already spent with labour while we were in the ship. We therefore trusted ourselves to the mercy
of

of the waves; and in about half an hour the boat was overfet by a sudden flurry from the north. What became of my companions in the boat, as well as of those who escaped on the rock, or were left in the vessel, I cannot tell; but conclude they were all lost. For my own part, I swam as fortune directed me, and was pushed forwards by wind and tide. I often let my legs drop, and could feel no bottom: But when I was almost gone, and able to struggle no longer, I found myself within my depth; and by this time the storm was much abated. The declivity was so small, that I walked near a mile before I got to the shore, which I conjectured was about eight o'clock in the evening. I then advanced forward near half a mile, but could not discover any sign of houses or inhabitants; at least I was in so weak a condition, that I did not observe them. I was extremely tired; and with that, and the heat of the weather, and about half a pint of brandy that I drank as I left the ship, I found myself much inclined to sleep. I lay down on the grass, which was very short and soft; where I slept sounder than ever I remember to have done in my life, and, as I reckoned, about nine hours; for when I awaked, it was just day-light. I attempted to rise, but was not able to stir; for as I happened to lie on my back, I found my arms and legs were strongly fastened on each side to the ground; and my hair, which was long and thick, tied down in the same manner. I likewise felt several slender ligatures across my body, from my arm-pits to my thighs. I could only look upwards; the sun began to grow hot, and the light offended mine eyes. I heard a confused noise about me; but, in the posture I lay, could see nothing except the sky. In a little time I felt something alive moving on my left leg, which advancing gently forward over my breast, came almost up to my chin; when,

when, bending mine eyes downwards as much as I could, I perceived it to be a human creature not six inches high, with a bow and arrow in his hands, and a quiver at his back. In the mean time I felt at least forty more of the same kind (as I conjectured) following the first. I was in the utmost astonishment, and roared so loud, that they all ran back in a fright; and some of them, as I was afterwards told, were hurt with the falls they got by leaping from my sides upon the ground. However, they soon returned; and one of them, who ventured so far as to get a full sight of my face, lifting up his hands and eyes by way of admiration, cried out in a shrill but distinct voice, Hekinah Degul: The others repeated the same words several times, but I then knew not what they meant. I lay all this while, as the reader may believe, in great uneasiness. At length struggling to get loose, I had the fortune to break the strings, and wrench out the pegs that fastened my left arm to the ground; for by lifting it up to my face, I discovered the methods they had taken to bind me; and, at the same time, with a violent pull, which gave me excessive pain, I a little loosened the strings that tied down my hair on the left side; so that I was just able to turn my head about two inches: But the creatures ran off a second time before I could seize them; whereupon there was a great shout in a very shrill accent; and, after it ceased, I heard one of them cry aloud, Tolgo Phonac; when in an instant I felt above an hundred arrows discharged on my left-hand, which pricked me like so many needles; and besides they shot another flight into the air, as we do bombs in Europe; whereof many, I suppose, fell on my body (though I felt them not), and some on my face, which I immediately covered with my left-hand. When this shower of arrows was over, I fell a groaning with grief

grief and pain; and then striving again to get loose, they discharged another volley larger than the first; and some of them attempted with spears to stick me in the sides; but, by good luck, I had on me a buff jerkin, which they could not pierce. I thought it the most prudent method to lie still; and my design was to continue so until night, when my left-hand being already loose, I could easily free myself: And as for the inhabitants, I had reason to believe I might be a match for the greatest armies they could bring against me, if they were all of the same size with him that I saw. But fortune disposed otherwise of me. When the people observed I was quiet, they discharged no more arrows. But, by the noise increasing, I knew their numbers were greater; and about four yards from me, over-against my right ear, I heard a knocking for above an hour, like people at work; when turning my head that way, as well as the pegs and strings would permit me, I saw a stage erected about a foot and an half from the ground, capable of holding four of the inhabitants, with two or three ladders to mount it: From whence one of them, who seemed to be a person of quality, made me a long speech, whereof I understood not one syllable. But I should have mentioned, that before the principal person began his oration, he cried out three times *Langro Dehul san* (these words and the former were afterwards repeated and explained to me). Whereupon immediately about fifty of the inhabitants came, and cut the strings that fastened the left side of my head, which gave me the liberty of turning it to the right, and of observing the person and gesture of him who was to speak. He appeared to be of a middle age, and taller than any of the other three who attended him; whereof one was a page, who held up his train, and seemed to be somewhat longer than my

middle finger; the other two stood, one on each side, to support him. He acted every part of an orator; and I could observe many periods of threatenings, and others of promises, pity, and kindness. I answered in a few words, but in the most submissive manner, lifting up my left-hand and both my eyes to the sun, as calling him for a witness; and being almost famished with hunger, having not eaten a morsel for some hours before I left the ship, I found the demands of nature so strong upon me, that I could not forbear showing my impatience (perhaps against the strict rules of decency) by putting my finger frequently on my mouth, to signify that I wanted food. The Hurgo (for so they call a great lord, as I afterwards learn'd) understood me very well: He descended from the stage, and commanded that several ladders should be applied to my sides, on which above an hundred of the inhabitants mounted, and walked towards my mouth, laden with baskets full of meat, which had been provided and sent thither by the king's orders, upon the first intelligence he received of me. I observed there was the flesh of several animals, but could not distinguish them by the taste. There were shoulders, legs, and loins shaped like those of mutton, and very well dressed, but smaller than the wings of a lark. I eat them by two or three at a mouthful and took three loaves at a time, about the bigness of musket-bullets. They supplied me as fast as they could, showing a thousand marks of wonder and astonishment at my bulk and appetite. I then made another sign that I wanted drink. They found by my eating that a small quantity would not suffice me; and being a most ingenious people, they flung up with great dexterity one of their largest hogheads; then rolled it towards my hand, and beat out the top; I drank it off at a draught, which I might well do, for it

C

hardly

hardly held half a pint, and tasted like a small wine of Burgundy, but much more delicious. They brought me a second hogshead, which I drank in the same manner, and made signs for more, but they had none to give me. When I had performed these wonders, they shouted for joy, and danced upon my breast, repeating several times, as they did at first, Hekinah Degul. They made me a sign that I should throw down the two hogsheads; but first warned the people below to stand out of the way, crying aloud, Borach Mivola; and when they saw the vessels in the air, there was an universal shout of Hekinah Degul. I confess I was often tempted while they were passing backwards and forwards on my body, to seize forty or fifty of the first that came in my reach, and dash them against the ground. But the remembrance of what I had felt, which probably might not be the worst they could do, and the promise of honour I made them, for so I interpreted my submissive behaviour, soon drove out those imaginations. Besides, I now considered myself as bound by the laws of hospitality to a people who had treated me with so much expence and magnificence. However, in my thoughts I could not sufficiently wonder at the intrepidity of those diminutive mortals, who durst venture to mount and walk on my body, while one of my hands was at liberty without trembling at the very sight of so prodigious a creature as I must appear to them. After some time, when they observed that I made no more demands for meat, there appeared before me a person of high rank from his Imperial Majesty. His excellency having mounted on the small of my right leg, advanced forwards up to my face, with about a dozen of his retinue; and producing his credentials under the signet royal, which he applied close to mine eyes, spoke about ten minutes, without any

sign

signs of anger, but with a kind of determinate resolution; often pointing forwards, which, as I afterwards found, was towards the capital city, about half a mile distant, whither it was agreed by his majesty in council that I must be conveyed. I answered in few words, but to purpose; and made a sign with my hand that was loose, putting it to the other (but over his excellency's head, for fear of hurting him or his train), and then to my own head and body, to signify that I desired my liberty. It appeared that he understood me well enough; for he shook his head by way of disapprobation, and held his hand in a posture to show that I must be carried as a prisoner. However, he made other signs to let me understand, that I should have meat and drink enough, and very good treatment. Whereupon I once more thought of attempting to break my bonds; but again, when I felt the smart of their arrows upon my face and hands, which were all in blisters, and many of the darts still sticking in them, and observing likewise that the number of my enemies increased, I gave tokens to let them know that they might do with me what they pleased. Upon this, the Hurgo and his train withdrew with much civility and cheerful countenances. Soon after, I heard a general shout, with frequent repetitions of the words *Peplom Selan*; and I felt great numbers of the people on my left side, relaxing the cords to such a degree, that I was able to turn upon my right, and to ease myself with making water; which I very plentifully did, to the great astonishment of the people, who conjecturing by my motions what I was going to do, immediately opened to the right and left on that side, to avoid the torrent which fell with such noise and violence from me. But before this, they had daubed my face and both my hands with a sort of ointment very pleasant to the smell,

which in a few minutes removed all the smart of their arrows. These circumstances, added to the refreshment I had received by their victuals and drink, which were very nourishing, disposed me to sleep. I slept about eight hours, as I was afterwards assured: and it was no wonder; for the physicians, by the emperor's order, had mingled a sleeping potion in the hogheads of wine.

It seems, that upon the first moment I was discovered sleeping on the ground after my landing, the emperor had early notice of it by an express; and determined in council, that I should be tied in the manner I have related (which was done in the night while I slept), that plenty of meat and drink should be sent me, and a machine prepared to carry me to the capital city.

This resolution perhaps may appear very bold and dangerous, and I am confident would not be imitated by any prince in Europe on the like occasion; however, in my opinion, it was extremely prudent as well as generous. For supposing these people had endeavoured to kill me with their spears and arrows while I was asleep; I should certainly have awaked with the first sense of smart, which might so far have roused my rage and strength, as to enable me to break the strings wherewith I was tied; after which, as they were not able to make resistance, so they could expect no mercy.

These people are most excellent mathematicians, and arrived to a great perfection in mechanics by the countenance and encouragement of the emperor, who is a renowned patron of learning. This prince hath several machines fixed on wheels, for the carriage of trees and other great weights. He often buildeth his largest men of war, whereof some are nine feet long, in the woods where the timber grows, and has them carried on these engines three

or four hundred yards to the sea. Five hundred carpenters and engineers were immediately set at work to prepare the greatest engine they had. It was a frame of wood raised three inches from the ground, about seven feet long and four wide, moving upon twenty-two wheels. The shout I heard, was upon the arrival of this engine; which, it seems, set out in four hours after my landing. It was brought parallel to me as I lay. But the principal difficulty was to raise and place me in this vehicle. Eighty poles, each of one foot high, were erected for this purpose, and very strong cords of the bigness of packthread, were fastened by hooks to many bandages, which the workmen had girt round my neck, my hands, my body, and my legs. Nine hundred of the strongest men were employed to draw up these cords by many pulleys fastened on the poles; and thus in less than three hours I was raised and flung into the engine, and there tied fast. All this I was told; for while the whole operation was performing, I lay in a profound sleep, by the force of that soporiferous medicine infused into my liquor. Fifteen hundred of the emperor's largest horses, each about four inches and a half high, were employed to draw me towards the metropolis, which, as I said, was half a mile distant.

About four hours after we began our journey, I awaked by a very ridiculous accident; for the carriage being stopt a while to adjust something that was out of order, two or three of the young natives had the curiosity to see how I looked when I was asleep: they climbed up into the engine, and advancing very softly to my face, one of them, an officer in the guards, put the sharp end of his half-pike a good way up into my left nostril, which tickled my nose like a straw, and made me sneeze violently: Whereupon they stole off unperceived; and it was

three weeks before I knew the cause of my awaking so suddenly. We made a long march the remaining part of the day, and rested at night with five hundred guards on each side of me, half with torches and half with bows and arrows, ready to shoot me if I should offer to stir. The next morning at sunrise we continued our march, and arrived within two hundred yards of the city-gates about noon. The emperor, and all his court, came out to meet us; but his great officers would by no means suffer his majesty to endanger his person by mounting on my body.

At the place where the carriage stopt, there stood an ancient temple, esteemed to be the largest in the whole kingdom; which having been polluted some years before by an unnatural murder, was according to the zeal of those people, looked upon as profane, and therefore had been applied to common use, and all the ornaments and furniture carried away. In this edifice it was determined I should lodge. The great gate fronting to the north was about four feet high, and almost two feet wide through which I could easily creep. On each side of the gate was a small window not above six inches from the ground: Into that on the left side, the king's smiths conveyed fourscore and eleven chains like those that hang to a lady's watch in Europe, and almost as large, which were locked to my left leg with six and thirty padlocks. Over-against this temple, on the other side of the great high-way, at twenty feet distance, there was a turret at least five feet high. Here the emperor ascended with many principal lords of his court, to have an opportunity of viewing me, as I was told, for I could not see them. It was reckoned, that above an hundred thousand inhabitants came out of the town upon the same errand; and, in spite of my guards, I believe

there

there could not be fewer than ten thousand at several times who mounted upon my body by the help of ladders. But a proclamation was soon issued to forbid it upon pain of death. When the workmen found it was impossible for me to break loose, they cut all the strings that bound me; whereupon I rose up with as melancholy a disposition as ever I had in my life. But the noise and astonishment of the people at seeing me rise and walk, are not to be expressed. The chains that held my left leg were about two yards long, and gave me not only the liberty of walking backwards and forwards in a semicircle, but being fixed within four inches of the gate, allowed me to creep in, and lie at my full length in the temple.

C H A P. II.

The Emperor of Lilliput, attended by several of the Nobility, comes to see the Author in his confinement. The Emperor's person and habit described. Learned men appointed to teach the author their language. He gains favour by his mild disposition. His pockets are searched, and his sword and pistols taken from him.

WHEN I found myself on my feet, I looked about me, and must confess I never beheld a more entertaining prospect. The country round appeared like a continued garden; and the inclosed fields, which were generally forty feet square, resembled so many beds of flowers. These fields were intermingled with woods of half a fang; and the tallest trees, as I could judge, appeared to be seven feet high. I viewed the town on my left-hand,

hand, which looked like the painted scene of a city in a theatre.

I had been for some hours extremely pressed by the necessities of nature; which was no wonder, it being almost two days since I had disburdened myself. I was under great difficulties between urgency and shame. The best expedient I could think on was, to creep into my house, which I accordingly did; and shutting the gate after me, I went as far as the length of my chain would suffer; and discharged my body of that uneasy load. But this was the only time I was every guilty of so uncleanly an action; for which I cannot but hope the candid reader will give some allowance, after he hath maturely and impartially considered my case and the distress I was in. From this time my constant practice was, as soon as I rose, to perform that business in open air, at the full extent of my chain; and due care was taken every morning before company came, that the offensive matter should be carried off in wheelbarrows, by two servants appointed for that purpose. I would not have dwelt so long upon a circumstance, that perhaps at first sight may appear not very momentuous, if I had not thought it necessary to justify my character in point of cleanliness to the world; which I am told some of my maligners have been pleased upon this and other occasions to call in question.

When this adventure was at an end, I came back out of my house, having occasion for fresh air. The Emperor was already descended from the tower, and advancing on horseback towards me, which had like to have cost him dear; for the beast, although very well trained, yet wholly unused to such a sight, which appeared as if a mountain moved before him, reared up on his hinder feet; but that prince, who is an excellent horseman, kept his seat until his attendants

tendants ran in, and held the bridle while his majesty had time to dismount. When he alighted, he surveyed me round with great admiration, but kept beyond the length of my chains. He ordered his cooks and butlers, who were already prepared, to give me victuals and drink, which they pushed forward in a sort of vehicle upon wheels until I could reach them. I took these vehicles, and soon emptied them all; twenty of them were filled with meat and ten with liquor; each of the former afforded me two or three good mouthfuls, and I emptied the liquor of ten vessels, which was contained in earthen vials, into one vehicle, drinking it off at a draught; and so I did with the rest. The empress and young princes of the blood of both sexes, attended by many ladies, sat at some distance in their chairs; but upon the accident that happened to the emperor's horse, they alighted and came near his person; which I am now going to describe. He is taller by almost the breadth of my nail than any of his court, which alone is enough to strike an awe into the beholders. His features are strong and masculine, with an Austrian lip, an arched nose, his complexion olive, his countenance erect, his body and limbs well proportioned, all his motions graceful, and his deportment majestic. He was then past his prime, being twenty-eight years and three quarters old, of which he had reigned about seven in great felicity, and generally victorious. For the better convenience of beholding him, I lay on my side, so that my face was parallel to his, and he stood but three yards off: however, I have had him since many times in my hand, and therefore cannot be deceived in the description. His dress was very plain and simple, the fashion of it between the Asiatic and the European; that he had on his head a light helmet of gold, adorned with jewels, and a plume on the crest. He held

held his sword drawn in his hand to defend himself if I should happen to break loose; it was almost three inches long, the hilt and scabbard were gold enriched with diamonds. His voice was shrill, but very clear and articulate, and I could distinctly hear it when I stood up. The ladies and courtiers were all most magnificently clad, so that the spot they stood upon seemed to resemble a petticoat spread on the ground, embroidered with figures of gold and silver. His imperial majesty spoke often to me, and I returned answers, but neither of us could understand a syllable. There were several of his priests and lawyers present (as I conjectured by their habits), who were commanded to address themselves to me, and I spoke to them in as many languages as I had the least smattering of, which were High and Low Dutch, Latin, French, Spanish, Italian, and *lingua Franca*; but all to no purpose. After about two hours the court retired, and I was left with a strong guard, to prevent the impertinence, and probably the malice of the rabble, who were very impatient to crowd about me as near as they durst; and some of them had the impudence to shoot their arrows at me as I sat on the ground by the door of my house whereof one very narrowly missed my left eye. But the colonel ordered six of the ringleaders to be seized, and thought no punishment so proper as to deliver them bound into my hands; which some of his soldiers accordingly did, pushing them forward with the but-ends of their pikes into my reach: I took them all in my right-hand, put five of them into my coat-pocket; and as to the sixth, I made countenance as if I would eat him alive. The poor man squalled terribly, and the colonel and his officers were in much pain, especially when they saw me take out my penknife: But I soon put them off of fear; for looking mildly, and immediately cutting

the strings he was bound with, I set him gently on the ground, and away he ran. I treated the rest in the same manner, taking them one by one out of my pocket; and I observed both the soldiers and people were highly delighted with this mark of my clemency, which was represented very much to my advantage at court.

Towards night I got with some difficulty into my house, where I lay on the ground, and continued to do so about a fortnight; during which time, the emperor gave orders to have a bed prepared for me. Six hundred beds of the common measure were brought in carriages, and worked up in my house; an hundred and fifty of their beds sown together made up the breadth and length, and these were four double, which however kept me but very indifferently from the hardness of the floor that was of smooth stone. By the same computation they provided me with sheets, blankets, and coverlets, tolerable enough for one who had been so long enured to hardships as I.

As the news of my arrival spread through the kingdom, it brought prodigious numbers of rich, idle, and curious people to see me; so that the villages were almost emptied, and great neglect of tillage and household affairs must have ensued, if his imperial majesty had not provided by several proclamations and orders of state against this inconvenience. He directed that those who had already beheld me should return home, and not presume to come within fifty yards of my house without licence from court; whereby the secretaries of state got considerable fees.

In the mean time, the emperor held frequent councils to debate what course should be taken with me; and I was afterwards assured by a particular friend, a person of great quality, who was as much
in

in the secret as any, that the court was under many difficulties concerning me. They apprehended my breaking loose; that my diet would be very expensive, and might cause a famine. Sometimes they determined to starve me; or at least to shoot me in the face and hands with poisoned arrows, which would soon dispatch me: But again they considered, that the stench of so large a carcase might produce a plague in the metropolis, and probably spread thro' the whole kingdom. In the midst of these consultations, several officers of the army went to the door of the great council-chamber, and two of them being admitted, gave an account of my behaviour to the six criminals above mentioned; which made so favourable an impression in the breast of his majesty and the whole board in my behalf, that an imperial commission was issued out, obliging all the villages nine hundred yards round the city, to deliver me in every morning six beeves, forty sheep, and other victuals for my subsistence; together with a proportionable quantity of bread and wine, and other liquors: for the due payment of which, his majesty gave assignments upon his treasury. For this prince lives chiefly upon his own demesnes; seldom, except upon great occasions, raising any subsidies upon his subjects, who were bound to attend him in his wars at their own expence. An establishment was also made of six hundred persons to be my domestics, who had board-wages allowed for their maintenance, and tents built for them very conveniently on each side of my door. It was likewise ordered, that three hundred taylor's should make me a suit of cloaths after the fashion of the country: That six of his majesty's greatest scholars should be employed to instruct me in their language: and lastly, that the emperor's horses, and those of the nobility, and troops of guards, should be exercised in my sight,

accustom themselves to me. All these orders were duly put in execution; and in about three weeks I made a progress in learning their language; during which time the emperor frequently honoured me with his visits, and was pleased to assist my masters in teaching me. We began already to converse together in some sort; and the first words I learnt, were to express my desire that he would please to give me my liberty; which I every day repeated on my knees. His answer, as I could apprehend, was, that this must be a work of time, not to be thought on without the advice of his council; and that first I must *Lumos kelmin pefso desmar lon empeso*; that is, *Swear a peace with him and his kingdom*: However, that I should be used with all kindness; and he advised me to acquire by my patience and discreet behaviour the good opinion of himself and his subjects. He desired I would not take it ill, if he gave orders to certain proper officers to search me; for probably I might carry about me several weapons, which must needs be dangerous things, if they answered the bulk of so prodigious a person. I said, his majesty should be satisfied; for I was ready to strip myself, and turn out my pockets before him. This I delivered, part in words, and part in signs. He replied, that by the laws of the kingdom I must be searched by two of his officers; that he knew this could not be done without my consent and assistance; that he had so good an opinion of my generosity and justice, as to trust their persons in my hands; that whatever they took from me should be returned when I left the country, or paid for at the rate which I would set upon them. I took up the two officers in my hands, put them first into my coat-pockets, and then into every other pocket about me, except my two fobs, and another secret pocket which I had no mind should be searched,

D

where-

wherein I had some little necessaries of no consequence to any but myself. In one of my fobs there was a silver watch, and in the other a small quantity of gold in a purse. These gentlemen having pen, ink, and paper about them, made an exact inventory of every thing they saw; and when they had done, desired I would set them down, that they might deliver it to the emperor. This inventory I afterwards translated into English, and is word for word as follows.

Imprimis, In the right coat-pocket of the Great Man-mountain (for so I interpret the words *Quinbut Flestrin*), after the strictest search, we found only one great piece of coarse cloth, large enough to be a foot-cloth for your majesty's chief room of state. In the left pocket we saw a huge silver chest, with a cover of the same metal, which we the searchers were not able to lift. We desired it should be opened; and one of us stepping into it, found himself up the mid-leg in a sort of dust, some part whereof flying up to our faces, set us both a-sneezing for several times together. In his right waistcoat pocket, we found a prodigious bundle of white thin substances, folded one over another, about the bigness of three men, tied with a strong cable, and marked with black figures; which we humbly conceive to be writings, every letter almost half as large as the palm of our hands. In the left, there was a sort of engine, from the back of which were extended twenty long poles, resembling the pallisadoes before your majesty's court; wherewith we conjecture the Man Mountain combs his head; for we did not always trouble him with questions, because we found it a great difficulty to make him understand us. In the large pocket on the right side of his middle cover (so I translate the word *ranfu-lu* by which they meant my breeches), we saw

hollow pillar of iron, about the length of a man, fastened to a strong piece of timber larger than the pillar; and upon one side of the pillar were huge pieces of iron sticking out, cut into strange figures, which we knew not what to make of. In the left pocket another engine of the same kind. In the smaller pocket, on the right side, were several round flat pieces of white and red metal, of different bulk. Some of the white, which seemed to be silver, were so large and heavy, that my comrade and I could hardly lift them. In the left pocket were two black pillars irregularly shaped: We could not, without difficulty, reach the top of them as we stood at the bottom of his pocket: One of them was covered, and seemed all of a-piece; but, at the upper end of the other, there appeared a white round substance, about twice the bigness of our heads. Within each of these was inclosed a prodigious plate of steel; which, by our orders, we obliged him to show us, because we apprehended they might be dangerous engines. He took them out of their cases, and told us, that in his own country his practice was to shave his beard with one of these, and to cut his meat with the other. There were two pockets which we could not enter: These he called his fobs; they were two large slits cut into the top of his middle cover, but squeezed close by the pressure of his belly. Out of the right fob hung a great silver chain, with a wonderful kind of engine at the bottom. We directed him to draw out whatever was at the end of that chain; which appeared to be a globe, half silver, and half of some transparent metal: For on the transparent side we saw certain strange figures circularly drawn, and thought we could touch them, until we found our fingers stopt with that lucid substance. He put this engine to our ears, which made an incessant noise

like that of a water-mill. And we conjecture it is either some unknown animal, or the God that he worships: But we are more inclined to the latter opinion, because he assured us (if we understood him right, for he expressed himself very imperfectly) that he seldom did any thing without consulting it. He called it his oracle, and said it pointed out the time for every action of his life. From the left foot he took out a net almost large enough for a fisherman, but contrived to open and shut like a purse, and served him for the same use: We found there in several massy pieces of yellow metal, which, if they be of real gold, must be of immense value.

Having thus, in obedience to your majesty's commands, diligently searched all his pockets, we observed a girdle about his waist made of the hide of some prodigious animal; from which, on the left side, hung a sword of the length of five men; and on the right, a bag or pouch divided into two cells, each cell capable of holding three of your majesty's subjects. In one of these cells were several globes or balls of a most ponderous metal, about the bigness of our heads, and required a strong hand to lift them: The other cell contained a heap of certain black grains, but of no great bulk or weight, for we could hold above fifty of them in the palm of our hands.

This is an exact inventory of what we found about the body of the Man Mountain; who used us with great civility, and due respect to your majesty's commission. Signed and sealed on the fourth day of the eighty-ninth moon of your majesty's auspicious reign.

Clesren Frelock, Marji Frelock.

WHEN this inventory was read over to the emperor

peror, he directed me to deliver up the several particulars. He first called for my scymiter, which I took out, scabbard and all. In the mean time he ordered three thousand of the choicest troops, who then attended him, to surround me at a distance with their bows and arrows just ready to discharge: But I did not observe it; for mine eyes were wholly fixed upon his majesty. He then desired me to draw my scymiter, which, although it had got some rust by the sea-water, was in most parts exceeding bright. I did so, and immediately all the troops gave a shout between terror and surprise; for the sun shone clear, and the reflexion dazzled their eyes as I waved the scymiter to and fro in my hand. His majesty, who is a most magnanimous prince, was less daunted than I could expect; he ordered me to return it into the scabbard, and cast it on the ground, as gently as I could, about six foot from the end of my chains. The next thing he demanded was one of the hollow iron pistols, by which he meant my pocket-pistols. I drew it out, and at his desire, as well as I could, expressed to him the use of it, and charging it only with powder, which by the closeness of my pouch happened to escape wetting in the sea (an inconvenience that all prudent mariners take especial care to provide against), I first cautioned the emperor not to be afraid; and then I let it off in the air. The astonishment here was much greater than at the sight of my scymiter. Hundreds fell down as if they had been struck dead; and even the emperor, although he stood his ground, could not recover himself for some time. I delivered up both my pistols in the same manner as I had done my scymiter, and then my pouch of powder and bullets; begging him that the former might be kept from fire; for it would

kindle with the smallest spark, and blow up his imperial palace into the air. I likewise delivered up my watch, which the emperor was very curious to see; and commanded two of his tallest yeomen of the guards to bear it on a pole upon their shoulders as draymen in England do a barrel of ale. He was amazed at the continual noise it made, and the motion of the minute-hand, which he could easily discern; for their sight is much more acute than ours. He asked the opinions of his learned men about him, which were various and remote, as the reader may well imagine without my repeating; although indeed I could not very perfectly understand them. I then gave up my silver and copper money, my purse with nine large pieces of gold, and some smaller ones; my knife and razor, my comb and silver snuff-box, my handkerchief and journal-book. My scymiter, pistols, and pouch, were conveyed in carriages to his majesty's stores; but the rest of my goods were returned me.

I had, as I before observed, one private pocket which escaped their search, wherein there was a pair of spectacles (which I sometimes use for the weakness of mine eyes), a pocket perspective, and several other little conveniences; which being of no consequence to the emperor, I did not think myself bound in honour to discover; and I apprehended they might be lost or spoiled if I ventured them out of my possession.

C H A P. III.

The Author diverts the emperor and his nobility both sexes in a very uncommon manner. The descriptions of the court of Lilliput described.

The

Author has his liberty granted him upon certain conditions.

MY gentleness and good behaviour had gained so far on the emperor and his court, and indeed upon the army and people in general, that I began to conceive hopes of getting my liberty in a short time. I took all possible methods to cultivate this favourable disposition. The natives came by degrees to be less apprehensive of any danger from me. I would sometimes lie down, and let five or six of them dance on my hand. And at last the boys and girls would venture to come and play at hide-and-seek in my hair. I had now made a good progress in understanding and speaking their language. The emperor had a mind one day to entertain me with several of the country shows; wherein they exceed all nations I have known, both for dexterity and magnificence. I was diverted with none so much as that of the rope-dancers, performed upon a slender white thread, extended about two feet, and twelve inches from the ground. Upon which, I shall desire liberty, with the reader's patience, to enlarge a little.

This diversion is only practised by those persons who are candidates for great employments and high favour at court. They are trained in this art from their youth; and are not always of noble birth or liberal education. When a great office is vacant, either by death or disgrace (which often happens), five or six of those candidates petition the emperor to entertain his majesty and the court with a dance on the rope; and whoever jumps the highest without falling, succeeds in the office. Very often the chief ministers themselves are commanded to show their skill, and to convince the emperor that they have not lost their faculty. Flimnap, the treasurer,

is

is allowed to cut a caper on the straight rope at least an inch higher than any other lord in the whole empire. I have seen him do the Sommerfet several times together, upon a trencher fixed on a rope which is no thicker than a common packthread in England. My friend Reldresal, principal secretary for private affairs, is, in my opinion, if I am not partial, the second after the treasurer; the rest of the great officers are much upon a par.

These diversions are often attended with fatal accidents, whereof great numbers are on record. I myself have seen two or three candidates break a limb. But the danger is much greater when the ministers themselves are commanded to shew their dexterity: For, by contending to excel themselves and their fellows, they strain so far, that there is hardly one of them who hath not received a fall, and some of them two or three. I was assured, that a year or two before my arrival, Flimnap would have infallibly broke his neck, if one of the king's cushions, that accidentally lay on the ground, had not weakened the force of his fall.

There is likewise another diversion, which is only shewn before the emperor and empress, and first minister, upon particular occasions. The emperor lays on a table three fine filken threads of six inches long. One is blue, the other red, and the third green. These threads are proposed as prizes, for those persons whom the emperor hath a mind to distinguish by a particular mark of his favour. The ceremony is performed in his majesty's great chamber of state; where the candidates are to undergo a trial of dexterity very different from the former, and such as I have not observed the least resemblance of in any other country of the old or the new world. The emperor holds a stick in his hands, both ends parallel to the horizon, while the candidates

dates advancing one by one, sometimes leap over the stick, and sometimes creep under it backwards and forwards several times, according as the stick is advanced or depressed. Sometimes the emperor holds one end of the stick and his first minister the other; sometimes the minister hath it entirely to himself. Whoever performs his part with most agility, and holds out the longest in *leaping* and *creeping*, is rewarded with the blue-coloured silk; the red is given to the next, and the green to the third, which they all wear girt twice round about the middle; and you see few great persons about this court who are not adorned with one of these girdles.

The horses of the army, and those of the royal stables, having been daily led before me, were no longer shy, but would come up to my very feet without starting. The riders would leap them over my hand as I held it on the ground; and one of the emperor's huntsmen upon a large courser, took my foot, shoe and all; which was indeed a prodigious leap. I had the good fortune to divert the emperor one day after a very extraordinary manner. I desired he would order several sticks of two feet high, and the thickness of an ordinary cane, to be brought me; whereupon his majesty commanded the master of his woods to give directions accordingly; and the next morning six woodmen arrived with as many carriages, drawn by eight horses to each. I took nine of these sticks, and fixing them firmly in the ground in a quadrangular figure, two feet and a half square; I took four other sticks and tied them parallel at each corner, about two feet from the ground; then I fastened my handkerchief to the nine sticks that stood erected, and extended it on all sides, until it was as tight as the top of a drum; and the four parallel sticks rising about five inches

inches higher than the handkerchief, served as ledges on each side. When I had finished my work, I desired the emperor to let a troop of his best horses, twenty-four in number, come and exercise upon this plain. His majesty approved of the proposal, and I took them up one by one in my hands, ready mounted and armed, with the proper officers to exercise them. As soon as they got into order, they divided into two parties, performed mock skirmishes, discharged blunt arrows, drew their swords, fled and pursued, attacked and retired; and, in short, discovered the best military discipline I ever beheld. The parallel sticks secured them and their horses from falling over the stage; and the emperor was so much delighted, that he ordered this entertainment to be repeated several days; and once was pleased to be lifted up, and give the word of command; and, with great difficulty, persuaded even the empress herself to let me hold her in her close chair within two yards of the stage, from whence she was able to take a full view of the whole performance. It was my good fortune that no ill accident happened in these entertainments. Only once a fiery horse that belonged to one of the captains pawing with his hoof, struck a hole in my handkerchief, and his foot slipping he overthrew his rider and himself: but I immediately relieved them both; for covering the hole with one hand, I set down the troop with the other, in the same manner as I took them up. The horse that fell was strained in the left shoulder, but the rider got no hurt; and I repaired my handkerchief as well as I could: However, I would not trust to the strength of it any more in such dangerous enterprizes.

About two or three days before I was set at liberty, as I was entertaining the court with these kind of feats, there arrived an express to inform his majesty

majesty, that some of his subjects, riding near the place where I was first taken up, had seen a great black substance lying on the ground, very oddly shaped, extending its edges round as wide as his majesty's bed-chamber, and rising up in the middle as high as a man: That it was no living creature, as they at first apprehended; for it lay on the grass without motion, and some of them had walked round it several times: That, by mounting upon each other's shoulders, they had got to the top, which was flat and even; and stamping upon it, they found it was hollow within: That, they humbly conceived it might be something belonging to the Man Mountain; and, if his majesty pleased, they would undertake to bring it with only five horses. I presently knew what they meant; and was glad at heart to receive this intelligence. It seems, upon my first reaching the shore, after our shipwreck, I was in such confusion, that before I came to the place where I went to sleep, my hat, which I had fastened with a string to my head while I was rowing, and had stuck on all the time I was swimming, fell off after I came to land; the string, as I conjecture, breaking by some accident, which I never observed, but thought my hat had been lost at sea. I intreated his imperial majesty to give orders it might be brought to me as soon as possible, describing to him the use and nature of it: And the next day the waggons arrived with it, but not in a very good condition; they had bored two holes in the rim, within an inch and a half of the edge, and fastened two hooks in the holes; these hooks were tied by a long cord to the harness; and thus my hat was dragged along for above half an English mile: But the ground in that country being extremely smooth and level, it received less damage than I expected.

Two

Two days after this adventure, the emperor having ordered that part of his army which quarters in and about his metropolis to be in readiness, took a fancy of diverting himself in a very singular manner. He desired I would stand like a colossus, with my legs as far asunder as I conveniently could. He then commanded his general (who was an old experienced leader, and a great patron of mine), to draw up the troops in close order, and march them under me; the foot by twenty-four in a breast, and the horse by sixteen, with drums beating, colours flying, and pikes advanced. This body consisted of three thousand foot, and a thousand horse. His majesty gave orders upon pain of death, that every soldier in his march should observe the strictest decency with regard to my person; which, however, could not prevent some of the younger officers from turning up their eyes as they passed under me. And to confess the truth, my breeches were at that time in so ill a condition, that they afforded some opportunities for laughter and admiration.

I had sent so many memorials and petitions for my liberty, that his majesty at length mentioned the matter first in the cabinet, and then in a full council; where it was opposed by none, except Skyresh Bolgolam, who was pleased, without any provocation, to be my mortal enemy. But it was carried against him by the whole board, and confirmed by the emperor. That minister was Galbet, or admiral of the realm; very much in his master's confidence, and a person well versed in affairs, but of a morose and sour complexion. However, he was at length persuaded to comply; but prevailed that the articles and conditions upon which I should be set free, and to which I must swear, should be drawn up by himself. These articles were brought to me by Skyresh Bolgolam in person, attended by two

under secretaries, and several persons of distinction. After they were read, I was demanded to swear to the performance of them; first in the manner of my own country, and afterwards in the method prescribed by their laws; which was to hold my right foot in my left hand, to place the middle finger of my right hand on the crown of my head, and my thumb on the tip of my right ear. But, because the reader may perhaps be curious to have some idea of the style and manner of expression peculiar to that people, as well as to know the articles upon which I recovered my liberty; I have made a translation of the whole instrument, word for word, as near as I was able; which I here offer to the public.

Golbasto Momaren Evlame Gurdilo Shefin Mul-ly Ullly Gue, most mighty Emperor of Lilliput, delight and terror of the universe, whose dominions extend five thousand blustrugs (about twelve miles in circumference), to the extremities of the globe; monarch of all monarchs; taller than the sons of men; whose feet press down to the centre, and whose head strikes against the sun; at whose nod the provinces of the earth shake their knees; pleasant as the spring, comfortable as the summer, fruitful as autumn, dreadful as winter: His most sublime Majesty proposes to the Man Mountain, lately arrived from our celestial dominions, the following articles, which by a solemn oath he shall be obliged to perform.

First, The Man Mountain shall not depart from our dominions without our licence under our great seal.

Secondly, He shall not presume to come into our metropolis without our express orders; at which time the inhabitants shall have two hours warning to keep within doors.

E

Thirdly,

Thirdly, The said Man Mountain shall confine his walks to our principal high-roads, and not offer to walk or lie down in a meadow or field of corn.

Fourthly, As he walks the said roads, he shall take the utmost care not to trample upon the bodies of any of our loving subjects, their horses, or carriages; nor take any of our said subjects into his hands, without their own consent.

Fifthly, If an express require extraordinary dispatch, the Man Mountain shall be obliged to carry in his pocket the messenger and horse a six days journey once in every moon, and return the said messenger back (if so required) safe to our imperial presence.

Sixthly, He shall be our ally against our enemies in the island of Blefuscu, and do his utmost to destroy their fleet, which is now preparing to invade us.

Seventhly, That the said Man Mountain shall, at his times of leisure, be aiding and assisting to our workmen, in helping to raise certain great stones towards covering the wall of the principal park, and other our royal buildings.

Eighthly, That the said Man Mountain shall in two moons time deliver an exact survey of the circumference of our dominions, by a computation of his own paces round the coast.

Lastly, That upon his solemn oath to observe the above articles, the said Man Mountain shall have a daily allowance of meat and drink, sufficient for the support of 1724 of our subjects; with free access to our royal person, and other marks of our favour. Given at our palace at Belfaborac the twelfth day of the ninety-first moon of our reign.

I swore and subscribed to these articles with great cheerfulness and content, although some of them were not so honourable as I could have wished.

which proceeded wholly from the malice of Skyresh Bolgolam the high-admiral; whereupon my chains were immediately unlocked, and I was at full liberty. The emperor himself in person did me the honour to be by at the whole ceremony. I made my acknowledgments by prostrating myself at his majesty's feet: But he commanded me to rise; and after many gracious expressions, which to avoid the censure of vanity I shall not repeat, he added, that he hoped I should prove a useful servant, and well deserve all the favours he had already conferred upon me, or might do for the future.

The reader may please to observe, that in the last article for the recovery of my liberty, the emperor stipulates to allow me a quantity of meat and drink sufficient for the support of 1724 Lilliputians. Some time after, asking a friend at court how they came to fix on that determined number, he told me, that his majesty's mathematicians having taken the height of my body by the help of a quadrant, and finding it to exceed theirs in the proportion of twelve to one, they concluded from the similarity of their bodies, that mine must contain at least 1724 of theirs, and consequently would require as much food as was necessary to support that number of Lilliputians. By which the reader may conceive an idea of the ingenuity of that people, as well as the prudent and exact economy of so great a prince.

C H A P. IV.

Blindendo, the metropolis of Lilliput, described, together with the Emperor's palace. A conversation between the Author and a principal secretary concerning

*ing the affairs of that empire. The Author's offer
to serve the Emperor in his wars.*

THE first request I made after I had obtained my liberty, was, that I might have licence to see Mildendo, the metropolis; which the emperor easily granted me, but with a special charge to do no hurt either to the inhabitants or their houses. The people had notice by proclamation of my design to visit the town. The wall which encompassed it, is two feet and an half high, and at least eleven inches broad, so that a coach and horses may be driven very safely round it; and it is flanked with strong towers at ten feet distance. I stept over the great western gate, and passed very gently, and sideling through the two principal streets, only in my short waistcoat, for fear of damaging the roofs and eaves of the houses with the skirts of my coat. I walked with the utmost circumspection, to avoid treading on any stragglers who might remain in the streets, although the orders were very strict that all people should keep in their houses at their own peril. The garret windows and tops of houses were so crowded with spectators, that I thought in all my travels I had not seen a more populous place. The city is an exact square, each side of the wall being five hundred feet long. The two great streets which run cross and divide it into four quarters are five feet wide. The lanes and alleys, which I could not enter, but only viewed them as I passed are from twelve to eighteen inches. The town is capable of holding five hundred thousand souls. The houses are from three to five stories. The shops and markets well provided.

The emperor's palace is in the centre of the city where the two great streets meet. It is inclosed by a wall of two feet high, and twenty feet distant from

from the buildings. I had his majesty's permission to step over this wall; and the space being so wide between that and the palace, I could easily view it on every side. The outward court is a square of forty feet, and includes two other courts: In the inmost are the royal apartments, which I was very desirous to see, but found it extremely difficult; for the great gates from one square into another were but eighteen inches high and seven inches wide. Now the buildings of the outer court were at least five feet high; and it was impossible for me to stride over them without infinite damage to the pile, although the walls were strongly built of hewn stone, and four inches thick. At the same time the emperor had a great desire that I should see the magnificence of his palace: But this I was not able to do till three days after, which I spent in cutting down with my knife some of the largest trees in the royal park, about an hundred yards distant from the city. Of these trees I made two stools, each about three feet high, and strong enough to bear my weight. The people having received notice a second time, I went again through the city to the palace, with my two stools in my hands. When I came to the side of the outer court, I stood upon one stool and took the other in my hand; this I lifted over the roof, and gently set it down on the space between the first and second court, which was eight feet wide. I then leapt over the buildings very conveniently from one stool to the other, and drew up the first after me with a hooked stick. By this contrivance I got into the inmost court; and lying down upon my side, I applied my face to the windows of the middle stories, which were left open on purpose, and discovered the most splendid apartments that can be imagined. There I saw the empress and the young princes in their several lodgings, with their chief

attendants about them. Her imperial majesty was pleased to smile very graciously upon me, and gave me out of the window her hand to kifs.

But I shall not anticipate the reader with further descriptions of this kind, because I reserve them for a greater work, which is now almost ready for the press; containing a general description of this empire from its first erection, thro' a long series of princes, with a peculiar account of their wars and politics, laws, learning, and religion; their plants and animals; their peculiar manners and customs, with other matters very curious and useful; my chief design at present being only to relate such events and transactions as happened to the public or to myself during a residence of about nine months in that empire.

One morning, about a fortnight after I had obtained my liberty, Reldresal, principal secretary (as they style him) of private affairs, came to my house attended only by one servant. He ordered his coach to wait at a distance, and desired I would give him an hour's audience; which I readily consented to, on account of his quality and personal merits, as well as of the many good offices he had done me during my solicitations at court. I offered to lie down, that he might the more conveniently reach my ear; but he chose rather to let me hold him in my hand during our conversation. He began with compliments on my liberty; said, he might pretend to some merit in it; but, however, added, that if it had not been for the present situation of things at court, perhaps I might not have obtained it so soon. For, said he, as flourishing a condition as we appear to be in to foreigners, we labour under two mighty evils; a violent faction at home, and the danger of an invasion by a most potent enemy from abroad. As to the first, you are to understand, that for above

seventy moons past, there have been two struggling parties in this empire under the names of *Tramecksan* and *Slamecksan*, from the high and low heels on their shoes, by which they distinguish themselves.

It is alleged indeed, that the high heels are most agreeable to our ancient constitution; but however this be, his majesty hath determined to make use of only low heels in the administration of the government and all offices, in the gift of the crown; as you cannot but observe; and particularly, that his majesty's imperial heels are lower at least by a drurr than any of his court. (Drurr is a measure about the fourteenth part of an inch.) The animosities between these two parties run so high, that they will neither eat nor drink nor talk with each other. We compute the tramecksan, or high heels, to exceed us in number; but the power is wholly on our side. We apprehend his imperial highness, the heir to the crown, to have some tendency towards the high heels; at least we can plainly discover one of his heels higher than the other; which gives him a hobble in his gait. Now, in the midst of these intestine disquiets, we are threatened with an invasion from the island of Blefuscu, which is the other great empire of the universe, almost as large and powerful as this of his majesty. For as to what we have heard you affirm, that there are other kingdoms and states in the world, inhabited by human creatures as large as yourself, our philosophers are in much doubt; and would rather conjecture that you dropt from the moon, or one of the stars; because it is certain that an hundred mortals of your bulk would in a short time destroy all the fruits and cattle of his majesty's dominions. Besides, our histories of six thousand moons make no mention of any other regions, than the two great empires of Lilliput and Blefuscu: Which two mighty powers have, as I am

am going to tell you, been engaged in a most obstinate war for six and thirty moons past. It began upon the following occasion. It is allowed on all hands, that the primitive way of breaking eggs before we eat them, was upon the larger end: but his present majesty's grandfather, while he was a boy, going to eat an egg, and breaking it according to the ancient practice, happened to cut one of his fingers; whereupon the emperor his father published an edict, commanding all his subjects, upon great penalties, to break the smaller end of their eggs. The people so highly resented this law, that our histories tell us, there have been six rebellions raised on that account; wherein one emperor lost his life, and another his crown. These civil commotions were constantly fomented by the monarchs of Blefuscu; and when they were quelled, the exiles always fled for refuge to that empire. It is computed that eleven thousand persons have, at several times, suffered death rather than submit to break their eggs at the smaller end. Many hundred large volumes have been published upon this controversy: But the books of the Big-Endians have been long forbidden, and the whole party rendered incapable by law of holding employments. During the course of these troubles, the emperors of Blefuscu did frequently expostulate by their ambassadors, accusing us of making a schism in religion, by offending against a fundamental doctrine of our great prophet Lustrug, in the fifty-fourth chapter of the Brundrecal (which is their Alcoran). This, however, is thought to be a mere strain upon the text: For the words are these; "That all true believers shall break their eggs at the convenient end." And which is the convenient end, seems, in my humble opinion, to be left to every man's conscience, or at least in the power of the chief magistrate, to determine. Now the Big-Indian exiles

have found so much credit in the emperor of Blefuscu's court, and so much private assistance and encouragement from their party here at home, that a bloody war hath been carried on between the two empires for six and thirty moons with various successes; during which time we have lost forty capital ships, and a much greater number of smaller vessels, together with thirty thousand of our best seamen and soldiers; and the damage received by the enemy is reckoned to be somewhat greater than ours. However, they have now equipped a numerous fleet, and are just preparing to make a descent upon us: And his imperial majesty, placing great confidence in your valour and strength, hath commanded me to lay this account of his affairs before you.

I desired the secretary to present my humble duty to the emperor, and to let him know, that I thought it would not become me, who was a foreigner, to interfere with parties; but I was ready, with the hazard of my life, to defend his person and state against all invaders.

C H A P. V.

The Author, by an extraordinary stratagem, prevents an invasion. A high title of honour is conferred upon him. Ambassadors arrive from the emperor of Blefuscu, and sue for peace. The Empress's apartment on fire by an accident; the Author instrumental in saving the rest of the palace.

THE empire of Blefuscu is an island situated to the north north-east side of Lilliput, from whence it is parted only by a channel of eight hundred yards wide. I had not yet seen it; and upon this notice of an intended invasion, I avoided appearing

pearing on that side of the coast, for fear of being discovered by some of the enemies ships, who had received no intelligence of me; all intercourse between the two empires having been strictly forbidden during the war, upon pain of death; and an embargo laid by our emperor upon all vessels whatsoever. I communicated to his majesty a project I had formed of seizing the enemy's whole fleet, which, as our scouts assured us, lay at anchor in the harbour ready to sail with the first fair wind. I consulted the most experienced seamen upon the depth of the channel, which they had often plumbed; who told me, that in the middle, at high water, it was seventy glumgluffs deep, which is about six feet of European measure; and the rest of it fifty glumgluffs at most. I walked to the north-east coast over against Blefuscu; where lying down behind a hillock, I took out my small pocket perspective glass, and viewed the enemy's fleet at anchor, consisting of about fifty men of war, and a great number of transports: I then came back to my house, and gave orders (for which I had a warrant) for a great quantity of the strongest cable and bars of iron; the cable was about as thick as packthread, and the bars of the length and size of a knitting-needle. I trebled the cable to make it stronger; and for the same reason I twisted three of the iron bars together, binding the extremities into a hook. Having thus fixed fifty hooks to as many cables, I went back to the north-east coast, and putting off my coat, shoes and stockings, walking into the sea in my leathern jerkin, about half an hour before high water. I waded with what haste I could, and swam in the middle about thirty yards until I felt the ground. I arrived to the fleet in less than half an hour. The enemy was so frightened when they saw me, that they leaped out of their ships, and

swam to the
thirty thou
fastening a
tied all the
thus empl
sand arrow
face; and
disturbanc
tion was f
libly lost,
dient. I
pair of sp
observed b
ers. The
I could u
boldly wit
many of v
tacles, bu
little to d
the hook
to pull: I
too fast I
part of n
the cord,
I resolut
stened th
shots in
knotted
tied, and
largest n
The I
nation o
with as
cables,
ships ru
when th
der, ar

swam

swam to shore; where there could not be fewer than thirty thousand souls. I then took my tackling, and fastening a hook to the hole at the prow of each, I tied all the cords together at the end. While I was thus employed, the enemy discharged several thousand arrows, many of which stuck in my hands and face; and besides the excessive smart, gave me much disturbance in my work. My greatest apprehension was for mine eyes; which I should have infallibly lost, if I had not suddenly thought of an expedient. I kept, amongst other little necessaries, a pair of spectacles in a private pocket, which, as I observed before, had escaped the emperor's searchers. These I took out, and fastened as strongly as I could upon my nose; and, thus armed, went on boldly with my work in spite of the enemy's arrows; many of which struck against the glasses of my spectacles, but without any other effect, further than a little to discompose them. I had now fastened all the hooks, and, taking the knot in my hand, began to pull: but not a ship would stir, for they were all too fast held by their anchors; so that the boldest part of my enterprize remained. I therefore let go the cord, and leaving the hooks fixed to the ships, I resolutely cut with my knife the cables that fastened the anchors; receiving above two hundred shots in my face and hands: Then I took up the knotted end of the cables to which my hooks were tied, and with great ease drew fifty of the enemy's largest men of war after me.

The Blefuscutians, who had not the least imagination of what I intended, were at first confounded with astonishment. They had seen me cut the cables, and thought my design was only to let the ships run a-drift, or fall foul on each other: But when they perceived the whole fleet moving in order, and saw me pulling at the end, they set up
such

such a scream of grief and despair, that it is almost impossible to describe or conceive. When I had got out of danger, I stopt a while to pick out the rows that stuck in my hands and face, and rubbed on some of the same the ointment that was given me at my first arrival, as I have formerly mentioned. I then took off my spectacles, and waiting about an hour until the tide was a little fallen, I waded to the middle with my cargo, and arrived safe at the royal port of Lilliput.

The emperor and his whole court stood on the shore expecting the issue of this great adventure. They saw the ships move forward in a large moon, but could not discern me, who was under my breast in water. When I advanced to the middle of the channel, they were yet more in pain, because I was under water to my neck. The emperor concluded me to be drowned, and that the enemy's fleet was approaching in a hostile manner. But he soon eased of his fears: for the channel grew shallower every step I made, I came in a short time within hearing; and holding up the end of the cable by which the fleet was fastened, I cried in a loud voice, Long live the most puissant emperor of Lilliput! This great prince received me at my landing with all possible encomiums; and created me a *Noadac* upon the spot, which is the highest title of honour among them.

His majesty desired I would take some other opportunity of bringing all the rest of his enemies into his ports. And so unmeasurable is the ambition of princes, that he seemed to think of nothing less than reducing the whole empire of Blefuscu to a province, and governing it by a viceroy; of destroying the Big-Indian exiles, and compelling the people to break the smaller end of their eggs; which he would remain sole monarch of the world.

world. But I endeavoured to divert him from this sign, by many arguments drawn from the topics of policy as well as justice: And I plainly protested, that I would never be an instrument of bringing a free and brave people into slavery: And when the matter was debated in council, the wisest part of the ministry were of my opinion.

This open bold declaration of mine was so opposite to the schemes and politics of his imperial majesty, that he could never forgive me: He mentioned it in a very artful manner at council, where, I was told, that some of the wisest appeared, at least in their silence, to be of my opinion; but others, who were my secret enemies, could not forbear some expressions which by a side-wind reflected on me. And from this time began an intrigue between his majesty and a junto of ministers maliciously bent against me, which broke out in less than six months; and had like to have ended in my utter destruction. Of so little weight are the greatest services to princes, when put into the balance with a refusal to gratify their passions.

About three weeks after this exploit, there arrived a solemn embassy from Blefuscu with humble offers of a peace; which was soon concluded, upon conditions very advantageous to our emperor; wherewith I shall not trouble the reader. There were six ambassadors, with a train of about five hundred persons; and their entry was very magnificent, suitable to the grandeur of their master and the importance of their business. When their treaty was finished, wherein I did them several good offices by the credit I now had, or at least appeared to have at court, their excellencies, who were privately told how much I had been their friend, made me a visit in form. They began with many compliments upon my valour and generosity; invited

F

me

me to that kingdom in the emperor their master's name; and desired me to shew them some proofs of my prodigious strength, of which they had heard so many wonders; wherein I readily obliged them, but shall not interrupt the reader with the particulars.

When I had for some time entertained their excellencies to their infinite satisfaction and surprise, I desired they would do me the honour to present my most humble respects to the emperor their master, the renown of whose virtues had so justly filled the whole world with admiration, and when a royal person I resolved to attend before I returned to my own country. Accordingly the next time I had the honour to see our emperor, I desired his general licence to wait on the Blefusudian monarch, which he was pleased to grant me, as I could plainly perceive, in a very cold manner; but could not guess the reason, till I had a whisper from a certain person, that Flimnap and Bolgolam had represented my intercourse with those ambassadors as a mark of disaffection, from which I am sure my heart was wholly free. And this was the first time I began to conceive some imperfect idea of courts and ministers.

It is to be observed, that these ambassadors spoke to me by an interpreter; the languages of both empires differing as much from each other as any in Europe, and each nation priding itself upon the antiquity, beauty, and energy of their own tongue, with an avowed contempt for that of their neighbours: Yet our emperor, standing upon the advantage he had got by the seizure of their fleet, obliged them to deliver their credentials, and make their speech in the Lilliputian tongue. And it must be confessed, that from the great intercourse of trade and commerce between both realms; from the

annual reception of exiles, which is mutual among them; and from the custom in each empire to send their young nobility and richer gentry to the other, in order to polish themselves, by seeing the world and understanding men and manners; there are few persons of distinction, or merchants, or seamen, who dwell in the maritime parts, but what can hold conversation in both tongues; as I found some weeks after, when I went to pay my respects to the emperor of Blefuscu, which in the midst of great misfortunes, through the malice of my enemies, proved a very happy adventure to me, as I shall relate in its proper place.

The reader may remember, that when I signed those articles upon which I recovered my liberty, there were some which I disliked upon account of their being too servile, neither could any thing but an extreme necessity have forced me to submit. But being now a Nardac, of the highest rank in that empire, such offices were looked upon as below my dignity; and the emperor (to do him justice) never once mentioned them to me. However, it was not long before I had an opportunity of doing his majesty, at least as I then thought, a most signal service. I was alarmed at midnight with the cries of many hundred people at my door; by which being suddenly awaked, I was in some-kind of terror. I heard the word *Burglum* repeated incessantly; several of the emperor's court making their way through the crowd, intreated me to come immediately to the palace, where her imperial majesty's apartment was on fire by the carelessness of a maid of honour, who fell asleep while she was reading a romance. I got up in an instant; and orders being given to clear the way before me, and it being likewise a moon-shine night, I made a shift to get to the palace without trampling on any of the people. I found they

had already applied ladders to the walls of the apartment, and were well provided with buckets, but the water was at some distance. These buckets were about the size of a large thimble, and the people supplied me with them as fast as they could; but the flame was so violent that they did little good. I might easily have stifled it with my coat, which I unfortunately left behind me for haste, and came away only in my leathern jerkin. The case seemed wholly desperate and deplorable; and this magnificent palace would have been burnt down to the ground, if, by a presence of mind unusual to me, I had not suddenly thought of an expedient. I had the evening before drank plentifully of a most delicious wine called Glimigrim (the Blefuscudians call it Flunec, but ours is esteemed the better sort), which is very diuretic. By the luckiest chance in the world I had not discharged myself of any part of it. The heat I had contracted by coming very near the flames, and by my labouring to quench them, made the wine begin to operate by urination, which I voided in such a quantity, and applied it well to the proper places, that in three minutes the fire was wholly extinguished; and the rest of the noble pile, which had cost so many ages in erecting, was preserved from destruction.

It was now day-light, and I returned to my house without waiting to congratulate with the emperor, because, although I had done a very eminent piece of service, yet I could not tell how his majesty might resent the manner by which I had performed it. For, by the fundamental laws of the realm, it is capital in any person, of what quality soever, to make water within the precincts of the palace. But I was a little comforted by a message from his majesty, that he would give orders to the grand justiciary for passing my pardon in form; which, however,

could not obtain. And I was privately assured, that the empress, conceiving the greatest abhorrence of what I had done, removed to the most distant side of the court, firmly resolved that those buildings should never be repaired for her use; and, in the presence of her chief confidants, could not forbear showing revenge.

CHAP. VI.

Of the inhabitants of Lilliput; their learning, laws, and customs. The manner of educating their children. The Author's way of living in that country. His vindication of a great lady.

ALTHOUGH I intend to leave the description of this empire to a particular treatise, yet, in the mean time, I am content to gratify the curious reader with some general ideas. As the common size of the natives is somewhat under six inches, so there is an exact proportion in all other animals, as well as plants and trees: For instance, the tallest horses and oxen are between four and five inches in height, the sheep an inch and a half, more or less; their feet about the bigness of a sparrow; and so the several gradations downward, until you come to the smallest, which, to my sight, were almost invisible; but nature hath adapted the eyes of the Lilliputians to all objects proper for their views: They see with great exactness, but at no great distance. And, to show the sharpness of their sight towards objects that are near, I have been much pleased with a cock pulling a lark which was not so large as a common hen; and a young girl threading an invisible needle with invisible silk. Their tallest trees are about seven feet high; I mean some of those in the great royal

royal park, the tops whereof I could but just reach with my fist clinched. The other vegetables are in the same proportion: But this I leave to the reader's imagination.

I shall say but little at present of their learning, which for many ages hath flourished in all its branches among them: But their manner of writing is very peculiar; being neither from the left to the right, like the Europeans; nor from the right to the left, like the Arabians; nor from up to down, like the Chinese; nor from down to up, like the Casagians, but asslant from one corner of the paper to the other, like ladies in England.

They bury their dead with their heads directed downwards; because they hold an opinion, that in eleven thousand moons they are all to rise again; in which period the earth, (which they conceive to be flat) will turn upside down; and by this means they shall, at the resurrection, be found ready standing on their feet. The learned among them confess the absurdity of this doctrine; but the practice still continues in compliance to the vulgar.

There are some laws and customs in this empire very peculiar; and if they were not so directly contrary to those of my own dear country, I should be tempted to say a little in their justification. It is only to be wished that they were as well executed. The first I shall mention relateth to informers. All crimes against the state are punished here with the utmost severity; but, if the person accused make his innocence plainly to appear upon his trial, the accuser is immediately put to an ignominious death, and, out of his goods or lands, the innocent person is quadruply recompensed for the loss of his time, for the danger he underwent, for the hardship of his imprisonment, and for all the charges he hath been at in making his defence: Or, if that fund be

deficient

sufficient, it is largely supplied by the crown. The emperor doth also confer on him some public mark of his favour; and proclamation is made of his innocence through the whole city.

They look upon fraud as a greater crime than theft, and therefore seldom fail to punish it with death: For they allege, that care and vigilance, with every common understanding, may preserve a man's goods from thieves, but honesty hath no fence against superior cunning: And since it is necessary that there should be a perpetual intercourse of buying and selling, and dealing upon credit; where fraud is permitted or connived at, or hath no law to punish it, the honest dealer is always undone, and the knave gets the advantage. I remember when I was once interceding with the king for a criminal who had wronged his master of a great sum of money, which he had received by order, and ran away with; and happening to tell his majesty, by way of extenuation, that it was only a breach of trust; the emperor thought it monstrous in me to offer, as a defence, the greatest aggravation of the crime: And truly I had little to say in return, farther than the common answer, that different nations had different customs; for I confess I was heartily ashamed.

Although we usually call reward and punishment the two hinges upon which all government turns, yet I could never observe this maxim to be put in practice by any nation except that of Lilliput. Whoever can there bring sufficient proof, that he hath strictly observed the laws of his country for seventy-three moons, hath a claim to certain privileges, according to his quality and condition of life, with a proportionable sum of money out of a fund appropriated for that use: He likewise acquires the title of Snilpal or Legal, which is added to his name, but doth not descend to his posterity. And these people
thought

thought it a prodigious defect of policy among them when I told them that our laws were enforced only by penalties, without any mention of reward. It is upon this account that the image of justice, in the courts of judicature, is formed with six eyes; two before, as many behind, and on each side one, to signify circumspection; with a bag of gold open in her right hand, and a sword sheathed in her left, to show she is more disposed to reward than punish.

In choosing persons for all employments, they have more regard to good morals than to great abilities: For, since government is necessary to mankind, they believe that the common size of human understandings is fitted to some station or other, and that Providence never intended to make the management of public affairs a mystery, to be comprehended only by a few persons of sublime genius, in which there seldom are three born in an age: But they suppose truth, justice, temperance, and the like to be in every man's power; the practice of which virtues, assisted by experience and a good intention, would qualify any man for the service of his country, except where a course of study is required. But they thought the want of moral virtues was so far from being supplied by superior endowments of the mind, that employments could never be put into such dangerous hands as those of persons so qualified; and, at least, that the mistakes committed by ignorance in a virtuous disposition, would never be of such fatal consequence to the public weal, as the practices of a man, whose inclinations led him to be corrupt, and had great abilities to manage, to multiply, and defend his corruptions.

In like manner, the disbelief of a divine Providence renders a man incapable of holding any public station: For, since kings avow themselves to be the deputies of Providence, the Lilliputians think

nothing

nothing can be more absurd, than for a prince to employ such men as disown the authority under which he acteth.

In relating these and the following laws, I would be understood to mean the original institutions, and not the most scandalous corruptions into which the people are fallen by the degenerate nature of man. For as to that infamous practice of acquiring great employments by dancing on the rope, or the ladders of favour and distinction by leaping over the backs, and creeping under them; the reader is to observe, that they were first introduced by the grandfather of the emperor now reigning, and grew to the present height by the gradual increase of party and faction.

Ingratitude is among them a capital crime, as we read it to have been in some other countries: For they reason thus; that whoever makes ill returns to his benefactor, must needs be a common enemy to the rest of mankind, from whom they have received no obligation; and therefore such a man is not fit to live.

Their notions relating to the duties of parents and children differ extremely from ours. For, since the conjunction of male and female is founded upon the great law of nature, in order to propagate and continue the species, the Lilliputians will needs have it, that men and women are joined together like other animals, by the motives of concupiscence; and that their tenderness towards their young proceedeth from the like natural principle: For which reason, they will never allow that a child is under any obligation to his father for begetting him, or to his mother for bringing him into the world; which, considering the miseries of human life, was neither a benefit in itself, nor intended so by his parents, whose thoughts in their love-encounters were otherwise

wife employed. Upon these, and the like reasonings, their opinion is, that parents are the last of others to be trusted with the education of their own children: And therefore they have in every town public nurseries, where all parents, except cottagers and labourers, are obliged to send their infants of both sexes to be reared and educated when they come to the age of twenty moons; at which time they are supposed to have some rudiments of docility. These schools are of several kinds, suited to different qualities and to both sexes. They have certain professors well skilled in preparing children for such a condition of life as befits the rank of their parents, and their own capacities as well as inclinations. I shall first say something of the male nurseries, and then of the female.

The nurseries for males of noble or eminent birth are provided with grave and learned professors, and their several deputies. The clothes and food of the children are plain and simple. They are bred up in the principles of honour, justice, courage, modesty, clemency, religion, and love of their country: They are always employed in some business, except in the times of eating and sleeping, which are very short, and two hours for diversions, consisting of bodily exercise. They are dressed by men under four years of age, and then are obliged to dress themselves, although their quality be ever so great, and the women attendants, who are aged proportionably to ours at fifty, perform only the most menial offices. They are never suffered to converse with servants, but go together in small or greater numbers to take their diversions, and always in the presence of a professor, or one of his deputies, whereby they avoid those early bad impressions of folly and vice to which our children are subjected. Their parents are suffered to see them only twice a year.

the visit is not to last above an hour; they are allowed to kiss the child at meeting and parting; a professor, who always standeth by on those occasions, will not suffer them to whisper, or use any meddling expressions, or bring any presents of toys, sweet-meats, and the like.

The pension from each family for the education and entertainment of a child, upon failure of due payment, is levied by the emperor's officers.

The nurseries for children of ordinary gentlemen, merchants, traders, and handicrafts, are managed proportionably after the same manner; only those designed for trades are put out apprentices at seven years old; whereas those of persons of quality continue in their exercise until fifteen, which answers to one and twenty with us: But the confinement is gradually lessened for the last three years.

In the female nurseries, the young girls of quality are educated much like the males, only they are dressed by orderly servants of their own sex, but always in the presence of a professor or deputy, until they come to dress themselves, which is at five years old. And if it be found that these nurses ever presume to entertain the girls with frightful or foolish stories, or the common follies practised by chambermaids among us, they are publicly whipped thrice about the city, imprisoned for a year, and banished for life to the most desolate parts of the country. Thus the young ladies there are as much ashamed of being cowards and fools as the men; and despise all personal ornaments beyond decency and cleanliness; neither did I perceive any difference in their education made by their difference of sex, only that the exercises of the females were not altogether so robust; and that some rules were given them relating to domestic life, and a smaller compass of learning was enjoined them: For their maxim is, that
among

among people of quality, a wife should be always reasonable and agreeable companion, because she cannot always be young. When the girls are twelve years old, which among them is the marriageable age, their parents or guardians take them home, with great expressions of gratitude to the professors, and seldom without tears of the young lady and her companions.

In the nurseries of females of the meaner sort the children are instructed in all kinds of works proper for their sex and their several degrees: Those intended for apprentices are dismissed at seven years old, the rest are kept to eleven.

The meaner families who have children at their nurseries, are obliged, besides their annual pension, which is as low as possible, to return to the steward of the nursery a small monthly share of their gettings, to be a portion for the child; and therefore all parents are limited in their expences by the law. For the Lilliputians think that nothing can be more unjust, than that people, in subservience to their own appetites, should bring children into the world and leave the burden of supporting them on the public. As to persons of quality, they give security to appropriate a certain sum for each child suitable to their condition; and these funds are always managed with good husbandry, and the most exact justice.

The cottagers and labourers keep their children at home, their business being only to till and cultivate the earth; and therefore their education is of little consequence to the public; but the old and diseased among them are supported by hospitals: For begging is a trade unknown in this empire.

And here it may perhaps divert the curious reader, to give some account of my domestics, and my manner of living in this country, during a residence

of nine months and thirteen days. Having a head mechanically turned, and being likewise forced by necessity, I had made for myself a table and chair, convenient enough, out of the largest trees in the royal park. Two hundred sempstresses were employed to make me shirts, and linen for my bed and table, all of the strongest and coarsest kind they could get; which, however, they were forced to quilt together into several folds; for the thickest was some degrees finer than lawn. Their linen is usually three inches wide, and three feet make a piece. The sempstresses took my measure as I lay on the ground, one standing at my neck and another at my mid-leg, with a strong cord extended, that each held by the end, while the third measured the length of the cord with a rule of an inch long. Then they measured my right thumb, and desired no more; for by a mathematical computation, that twice round the thumb is once round the wrist, and so on to the neck and the waist; and by the help of my old shirt, which I displayed on the ground before them for a pattern, they fitted me exactly. Three hundred tailors were employed in the same manner to make me clothes; but they had another contrivance for taking my measure. I kneeled down, and they raised a ladder from the ground to my neck; upon this ladder one of them mounted, and he let fall a plumb-line from my collar to the floor, which just answered the length of my coat; but my waist and arms I measured myself. When my clothes were finished, which was done in my house (for the largest of theirs would not have been able to hold them), they looked like the patch-work made by the ladies in England, only that mine were all of a colour.

I had three hundred cooks to dress my victuals, in little convenient huts built about my house, where
G they

they and their families lived, and prepared me two dishes a-piece. I took up twenty waiters in my hands and placed them on the table; an hundred more attended below on the ground, some with dishes of meat, and some with barrels of wine, and other liquors, slung on their shoulders; all which the waiters above drew up as I wanted, in a very ingenious manner, by certain cords, as we draw the bucket up a well in Europe. A dish of their meat was a good mouthful, and a barrel of their liquor a reasonable draught. Their mutton yields to ours, but their beef is excellent. I have had a surloin so large that I have been forced to make three bites of it; this is rare. My servants were astonished to see me eat it bones and all, as in our country we do the leg of a lark. Their geese and turkeys I usually eat a whole mouthful; and I must confess they far exceed ours. Of their smaller fowl I could take up twenty or thirty at the end of my knife.

One day his imperial majesty being informed of my way of living, desired that himself and his sons, with all in consort, with the young princes of the blood of both sexes, might have the happiness (as he was pleased to call it) of dining with me. They came accordingly; and I placed them upon chairs of state round the table, just over against me, with their guards about them. Flimnap the lord high treasurer attended there likewise with his white staff; and I observed he often looked on me with a sour countenance, which I would not seem to regard, but eat more than usual, in honour to my dear country, as was to fill the court with admiration. I have for private reasons to believe, that this visit from his majesty gave Flimnap an opportunity of doing me some offices to his master. That minister had always been my secret enemy, although he outwardly caressed me more than was usual to the moroseness of his nature.

He represented to the emperor the low condition of his treasury; that he was forced to take up money at great discount; that exchequer bills would not circulate under nine *per cent.* below par; that I had cost his majesty above a million and a half of sprugs (their greatest gold coin, about the bigness of a buck's angle); and upon the whole, that it would be ad- visable in the emperor to take the first fair occasion for a re- dismissal me.

I am here obliged to vindicate the reputation of a large excellent lady, who was an innocent sufferer it; upon my account. The treasurer took a fancy to see me jealous of his wife, from the malice of some evil tongues, who informed him that her grace had taken a violent affection for my person; and the court scandal ran for some time, that she once came privately to my lodging. This I solemnly declare to be a most infamous falsehood, without any grounds, farther than that her grace was pleased to treat me with all innocent marks of freedom and friendship. of her own she came often to my house, but always publicly, nor ever without three more in the coach, who were usually her sister, and young daughter, and some particular acquaintance; but this was common to many other ladies of the court. And I still appeal to my servants round, whether they at any time saw a coach at my door without knowing what persons were in it. On these occasions, when a servant had given me notice, my custom was to go immediately to the door; and after paying my respects, to take up the coach and two horses very carefully in my hands (for if there were six horses, the postillion always unharnessed four), and place them on a table, where I had fixed a moveable rim quite round, of five inches high, to prevent accidents. And I have often had four coaches and horses at once on my table full of company, while

I sat in my chair leaning my face towards them, and when I was engaged with one set, the coachmen would gently drive the others round my table. I have passed many an afternoon very agreeably in these conversations: But I defy the treasurer, or his two informers (I will name them, and let them make their best of it), Clustril and Drunlo, to prove that any person ever came to me *incognito*, except the secretary Reldresal, who was sent by express command of his imperial majesty, as I have before related. I should not have dwelt so long upon this particular, if it had not been a point wherein the reputation of a great lady is so nearly concerned; to say nothing of my own, although I had the honour to be a Nardac, which the treasurer himself is not, for all the world knows he is only a Glumglum; a title inferior by one degree, as that of a marquis is to a duke in England; yet I allow he preceded me in right of his post. These false informations, which I afterwards came to the knowledge of by an accident not proper to mention, made the treasurer show his lady for some time an ill countenance, and me a worse: For although he was at last undeceived and reconciled to her, yet I lost all credit with him, and found my interest decline very fast with the emperor himself, who was indeed too much governed by that favourite.

C H A P. VII.

The Author being informed of a design to accuse him of high treason, maketh his escape to Blefuscu. His reception there.

BEFORE I proceed to give an account of my leaving this kingdom, it may be proper to inform

them from the reader of a private intrigue which had been
coaching two months forming against me.

I had been hitherto all my life a stranger to courts,
which I was unqualified by the meanness of my
condition. I had indeed heard and read enough of
the dispositions of great princes and ministers; but
I never expected to have found such terrible effects of
them in so remote a country, governed, as I thought,
by very different maxims from those in Europe.

When I was just preparing to pay my attendance
on the emperor of Blefuscu, a considerable person at
court (to whom I had been very serviceable at a time
when he lay under the highest displeasure of his im-
perial majesty) came to my house very privately at
night in a close chair, and, without sending his name,
desired admittance: the chairmen were dismissed; I
put the chair, with his lordship in it, into my coat-
pocket, and giving orders to a trusty servant to say
I was indisposed and gone to sleep, I fastened the
door of my house, placed the chair on the table
according to my usual custom, and sat down by it.
After the common salutations were over, observing
his lordship's countenance full of concern, and in-
quiring into the reason, he desired I would hear
him with patience, in a matter that highly concern-
ed my honour and my life. His speech was to the
following effect, for I took notes of it as soon as he
left me.

You are to know, said he, that several committees
of council have been lately called in the most pri-
vate manner on your account; and it is but two
days since his majesty came to a full resolution.

You are very sensible that Skyris Bolgolah (Gal-
bet, or high-admiral) hath been your mortal enemy
almost ever since your arrival. His original reasons
I know not; but his hatred is much increased since
your great success against Blefuscu, by which his
glory

glory as admiral is obscured. This lord, in conjunction with Flimnap the high-treasurer, whose enmity against you is notorious on account of his late Majesty's death, Limtoc the general, Lalcon the chamberlain, and Balmoff the grand justiciary, have prepared articles of impeachment against you, for treason and other capital crimes.

This preface made me so impatient, being conscious of my own merit and innocence, that I was going to interrupt; when he entreated me to be patient and thus proceeded.

Out of gratitude for the favours you have done me, I procured information of the whole proceedings, and a copy of the articles, wherein I venture my head for your service.

Articles of Impeachment against Quinbus Flestrin (the Man Mountain.)

ARTICLE I.

WHEREAS, by a statute made in the reign of our imperial majesty Calin Deffar Plune, it is enacted That whoever shall make water within the precincts of the royal palace, shall be liable to the pains and penalties of high treason: Notwithstanding, the said Quinbus Flestrin, in open breach of the said law, under colour of extinguishing the fire kindled in the apartment of his majesty's most dear imperial consort, did maliciously, traiterously, and devilishly, by discharge of his urine, put out the said fire kindled in the said apartment, lying, and being within the precincts of the said royal palace; against the statute in that case provided, &c. against his duty, &c.

ARTICLE II.

That the said Quinbus Flestrin having brought

the imperial fleet of Blefuscu into the royal port, and being afterwards commanded by his imperial majesty to seize all the other ships of the said empire of Blefuscu, and reduce that empire to a province, to be governed by a viceroy from hence; and to destroy and put to death, not only all the Big-Indian exiles, but likewise all the people of that empire who would not immediately forsake the Big-Indian heresy; he, the said Flestrin, like a false traitor against his most auspicious, serene, imperial majesty, did petition to be excused from the said service, upon pretence of unwillingness to force the consciences, to destroy the liberties and lives of an innocent people.

ARTICLE III.

That, whereas certain ambassadors arrived from the court of Blefuscu to sue for peace in his majesty's court; he, the said Flestrin, did, like a false traitor, aid, abet, comfort, and divert the said ambassadors, although he knew them to be servants to a prince who was lately an open enemy to his imperial majesty, and in open war against his said majesty.

ARTICLE IV.

That the said Quinbus Flestrin, contrary to the duty of a faithful subject, is now preparing to make a voyage to the court and empire of Blefuscu; for which he hath received only verbal licence from his imperial majesty; and, under colour of the said licence, doth falsely and traiterously intend to take the said voyage, and thereby to aid, comfort, and abet the emperor of Blefuscu, so late an enemy, and in open war with his imperial majesty aforesaid.

There are some other articles, but these are the most

most important of which I have read you an abstract.

In the several debates upon this impeachment, must be confessed that his majesty gave many marks of his great lenity; often urging the services you had done him, and endeavouring to extenuate your crimes. The treasurer and admiral insisted that you should be put to the most painful and ignominious death, by setting fire to your house at night; and the general was to attend with twenty thousand men, armed with poisoned arrows, to shoot you on the face and hands. Some of your servants were to have private orders to strew a poisonous juice on your shirts and sheets, which would soon make you tear your own flesh, and die in the utmost torture. The general came into the same opinion; so that for a long time there was a majority against you. But his majesty resolving if possible to spare your life, last brought off the chamberlain.

Upon this incident, Reldresal, principal secretary for private affairs, who always approved himself your true friend, was commanded by the emperor to deliver his opinion, which he accordingly did; and therein justified the good thoughts you have of him. He allowed your crimes to be great; but that there was room for mercy, the most commendable virtue in a prince, and for which his majesty was justly celebrated. He said the friendship between you and him was so well known to the world, that perhaps the most honourable Board might think him partial: however, in obedience to the command he had received, he would freely offer his sentiments. That if his majesty, in consideration of your services, and pursuant to his own merciful disposition, would please to spare your life, and only give orders to put out both your eyes, he humbly conceived, that by this expedient justice might in some

measure be satisfied, and all the world would applaud the lenity of the emperor, as well as the fair and generous proceedings of those who have the honour to be his counsellors: That the loss of your eyes would be no impediment to your bodily strength, which you might still be useful to his majesty: That blindness is an addition to courage, by concealing dangers from us: That the fear you had for your eyes, was the greatest difficulty in bringing over the enemy's fleet; and it would be sufficient for you to be by the eyes of the ministers, since the greatest princes do no more.

This proposal was received with the utmost disapprobation by the whole Board. Bolgolam, the admiral, could not preserve his temper, but rising up in fury said, he wondered how the secretary durst presume to give his opinion for preserving the life of a traitor: That the services you had performed were, by all true reasons of state, the great aggravation of your crimes; that you who were able to extinguish the fire by discharge of urine in her majesty's apartment (which he mentioned with horror), might at another time raise an inundation by the same means to drown the whole palace; and the same strength which enabled you to bring over the enemy's fleet, might serve upon the first discontent to carry it back: that he had good reasons to think you were a Big-Indian in your heart; and as treason begins in the heart before it appears in overt acts, so he accused you as a traitor on that account, and therefore insisted you should be put to death.

The treasurer was of the same opinion; he showed to what straits his majesty's revenue was reduced by the charge of maintaining you, which would soon grow insupportable: That the secretary's expedient of putting out your eyes, was so far from being a remedy against this evil, that it would probably increase

crease it; as it is manifest from the common practice of blinding some kind of fowl, after which they feed the faster, and grew sooner fat: That his imperial majesty and the council, who are your judges, were in their own consciences fully convinced of your guilt; which was a sufficient argument to condemn you to death, without the formal process required by the strict letter of the law.

But his imperial majesty, fully determined against capital punishment, was graciously pleased to say that since the council thought the loss of your eyes too easy a censure, some other may be inflicted hereafter. And your friend the secretary humbly desiring to be heard again, in answer to what the treasurer had objected concerning the great charge his majesty was at in maintaining you; said, that his excellency, who had the sole disposal of the emperor's revenue, might easily provide against this evil, by gradually lessening your establishment; in which, for want of sufficient food, you would grow weak and faint, and lose your appetite, and consequently decay and consume in a few months; neither would the stench of your carcass be then so dangerous, when it should become more than half diminished; and immediately upon your death, for or six thousand of his majesty's subjects might in two or three days cut your flesh from your bones, take it away by cart-loads, and bury it in distant parts to prevent infection; leaving the skeleton as a monument of admiration to posterity.

Thus, by the great friendship of the secretary the whole affair was compromised. It was strictly enjoined, that the project of starving you by degrees should be kept a secret; but the sentence of putting out your eyes was entered on the books; none dissenting except Bolgolam the admiral; who being a creature of the empress, was perpetually instigated

her majesty to insist upon your death; she having
perpetual malice against you on account of
infamous and illegal method you took to extin-
guish the fire in her apartment.

In three days your friend the secretary will be
expected to come to your house, and read before you
articles of impeachment; and then to signify
great lenity and favour of his majesty and coun-
cil; whereby you are only condemned to the loss
of your eyes, which his majesty doth not question
you will gratefully and humbly submit to; and
twenty of his majesty's surgeons will attend, in or-
der to see the operation well performed, by dischar-
ging very sharp-pointed arrows into the balls of
your eyes as you lie on the ground.

I leave to your prudence what measures you will
take; and to avoid suspicion, I must immediately
return in as private a manner as I came.

His lordship did so, and I remained alone, under
many doubts and perplexities of mind.

It was a custom introduced by this prince and his
ministry (very different, as I have been assured, from
the practices of former times), that after the court
had decreed any cruel execution, either to gratify
the monarch's resentment or the malice of a fa-
avourite, the emperor always made a speech to his
whole council, expressing his great lenity and ten-
derness, as qualities known and confessed by all the
world. This speech was immediately published
through the kingdom; nor did any thing terrify the
people so much as those encomiums on his maje-
sty's mercy; because it was observed, that the more
these praises were enlarged and insisted on, the more
inhuman was the punishment, and the sufferer more
innocent. Yet, as to myself, I must confess, having
never been designed for a courtier either by my birth
or education, I was so ill a judge of things, that I
could not discover the lenity and favour of this sen-
tence;

tence; but conceived it (perhaps erroneously) rather to be rigorous than gentle. I sometimes thought of standing my trial; for although I could not deny the facts alleged in the several articles, yet I hoped they would admit of some extenuations. But living in my life perused many state-trials, which I ever observed to terminate as the judges thought fit to direct, I durst not rely on so dangerous a defence, in so critical a juncture, and against such powerful enemies. Once I was strongly bent upon resistance: For while I had liberty, the whole strength of that empire could hardly subdue me, and I might easily with stones pelt the metropolis to pieces: But I soon rejected that project with horror, by remembering the oath I had made to the emperor, the favours I had received from him, and the high title of Nardac he conferred upon me. Neither had I so soon learned the gratitude of courtiers, to persuade myself that his majesty's present severities acquitted me of all past obligations.

At last I fixed upon a resolution, for which it is probable I may incur some censure, and not unjustly; for I confess I owe the preserving mine eyes and consequently my liberty, to my own great rashness and want of experience: Because, if I had then known the nature of princes and ministers, which I have since observed in many other courts, and their methods of treating criminals less obnoxious than myself, I should with great alacrity and readiness have submitted to so easy a punishment; but hurried on by the precipitancy of youth, and having his imperial majesty's licence to pay my attendants upon the emperor of Blefuscu, I took this opportunity, before the three days were elapsed, to send a letter to my friend the secretary, signifying my resolution of setting out that morning for Blefuscu.

rather than to the leave I had got; and, without waiting for an answer, I went to that side of the island where our fleet lay. I seized a large man of war, and a cable to the prow, and lifting up the anchors, I stript myself, put my clothes (together with my coverlet, which I carried under my arm) into the vessel; and drawing it after me, between wading and swimming arrived at the royal port of Blefuscu, where the people had long expected me. They sent me two guides to direct me to the capital city, which is of the same name. I held them in my hands until I came within two hundred yards of the gate; and desired them to signify my arrival to one of the secretaries, and let him know I there waited his majesty's commands. I had an answer about an hour, that his Majesty, attended by the royal family and great officers of the court, was coming out to receive me. I advanced a hundred yards; the emperor and his train alighted from their coaches; the empress and ladies from their coaches; and I did not perceive they were in any fright or concern. I lay on the ground to kiss his majesty's hand and the empress's hand. I told his majesty, that I was come according to my promise, and with the licence of the emperor my master, to have the honour of seeing so mighty a monarch, and to offer him any service in my power, consistent with my duty to my own prince; not mentioning a word of my disgrace, because I had hitherto no regular information of it, and might suppose myself wholly ignorant of any such design; neither could I reasonably conceive that the emperor would discover the secret while I was out of his power: Wherein, however, it soon appeared I was deceived.

I shall not trouble the reader with the particular account of my reception at this court, which was suitable to the generosity of so great a prince; nor

of the difficulties I was in for want of a house and bed, being forced to lie on the ground wrapt up in my coverlet.

C H A P. VIII.

The Author, by a lucky accident, finds means to leave Blefuscu; and, after some difficulties, returns safe to his native country.

THREE days after my arrival, walking out of curiosity to the north-east coast of the island I observed, about half a league off in the sea, some what that looked like a boat overturned: I pulled off my shoes and stockings, and wading two or three hundred yards, I found the object to approach near by force of the tide, and then plainly saw it to be a real boat, which I supposed might, by some tempest, have been driven from a ship. Whereupon I returned immediately towards the city, and desired his imperial majesty to lend me twenty of the tallest vessels he had left after the loss of his fleet, and three thousand seamen under the command of his vice-admiral. This fleet sailed round, while I went back the shortest way to the coast where I first discovered the boat: I found the tide had driven it still nearer; the seamen were all provided with cordage, which I had before-hand twisted to a sufficient strength. When the ships came up, I strengthened myself, and waded until I came within an hundred yards of the boat; after which I was forced to swim till I got up to it. The seamen threw me the end of the cord, which I fastened to a hole in the fore-part of the boat, and the other end to a man of war. But I found all my labour to little purpose; for being out of my depth, I was not able to work.

this necessity I was forced to swim behind, and push the boat forwards as often as I could with one of my hands; and the tide favouring me, I advanced so far that I could just hold up my chin and feel the ground. I rested two or three minutes, and then gave the boat another shove, and so on till the sea was no higher than my arm-pits. And now the most laborious part being over, I took out my other cables, which were stowed in one of the ships, and fastening them first to the boat, and then to nine of the vessels which attended me, the wind being favourable, the seamen towed and I shoved, till we arrived within forty yards of the shore; and waiting till the tide was out, I got dry to the boat; and by the assistance of two thousand men with ropes and engines, I made a shift to turn it on its bottom, and found it was but little damaged.

I shall not trouble the reader with the difficulties I was under by the help of certain paddles, which coast me ten days making, to get my boat to the royal fort of Blefuscu; where a mighty concourse of people appeared upon my arrival, full of wonder at the sight of so prodigious a vessel. I told the emperor, that my good fortune had thrown this boat in my way to carry me to some place from whence I might return into my native country; and begged his majesty's orders for getting materials to fit it up, together with his licence to depart; which, after some kind expostulations, he was pleased to grant.

I did very much wonder in all this time not to have heard of any express relating to me from our emperor to the court of Blefuscu. But I was afterwards given privately to understand, that his imperial majesty, never imagining I had the least notice of his designs, believed I was only gone to Blefuscu in performance of my promise, according to the li-

cence he had given me, which was well known at our court, and would return in a few days when that ceremony was ended. But he was at last in pain with my long absence; and consulting with the treasurer and the rest of that cabal, a person of quality was dispatched with the copy of the articles against me. This envoy had instructions to represent to the monarch of Blefuscu the great lenity of his master, who was content to punish me no further than with the loss of mine eyes: That I had fled from justice; and if I did not return in two hours, I should be deprived of my title of Nardac, and declared a traitor. The envoy further added, that in order to maintain the peace and amity between both empires, his master expected that his brother of Blefuscu would give orders to have me sent back to Lilliput, bound hand and foot, to be punished as a traitor.

The emperor of Blefuscu having taken three days to consult, returned an answer consisting of many civilities and excuses. He said, that as for sending me bound, his brother knew it was impossible; that although I had deprived him of his fleet, yet he owed great obligations to me for many good offices I had done him in making the peace: That however, both their majesties would soon be made easy for I had found a prodigious vessel on the shore, able to carry me on the sea, which he had given orders to fit up with my own assistance and direction; and he hoped in a few weeks both empires would be freed from so insupportable an incumbrance.

With this answer the envoy returned to Lilliput, and the monarch of Blefuscu related to me all that had passed, offering me at the same time (but under the strictest confidence) his gracious protection, if I would continue in his service; wherein altho

believed
put any co
ould poss
acknowled
humbly be
Fortune, v
in my way
ocean, rat
between tw
find the ex
by a certa
resolution
These c
parture fo
the court,
contributed
ed to mal
directions
linen toge
and cables
thickest a
I happened
shore, fer
of three h
ther uses
down for
and mast
silted by
me in sm
work.
In abou
to receive
leave. T
the palac
which he
press and
presented

I believed him sincere, yet I resolved never more to put any confidence in princes or ministers, where I could possibly avoid it; and therefore, with all due acknowledgments for his favourable intentions, I humbly begged to be excused. I told him, that since Fortune, whether good or evil, had thrown a vessel in my way, I was resolved to venture myself in the ocean, rather than be an occasion of differences between two such mighty monarchs. Neither did I find the emperor at all displeased; and I discovered by a certain accident, that he was very glad of my resolution, and so were most of his ministers.

These considerations moved me to hasten my departure somewhat sooner than I intended; to which the court, impatient to have me gone, very readily contributed. Five hundred workmen were employed to make two sails to my boat, according to my directions, by quilting thirteenfold of their strongest linen together. I was at the pains of making ropes and cables, by twisting ten, twenty, or thirty of the thickest and strongest of theirs. A great stone that I happened to find, after a long search by the sea-shore, served me for an anchor. I had the tallow of three hundred cows for greasing my boat and other uses. I was at incredible pains in cutting down some of the largest timber trees for oars and masts; wherein I was, however, much assisted by his majesty's ship-carpenters, who helped me in smoothing them, after I had done the rough work.

In about a month, when all was prepared, I sent to receive his Majesty's commands, and to take my leave. The emperor and royal family came out of the palace; I lay down on my face to kiss his hand, which he very graciously gave me; so did the empress and young princes of the blood. His majesty presented me with fifty purses of two hundred sprigs

a-piece, together with his picture at full length, which I put immediately into one of my gloves, to keep it from being hurt. The ceremonies at my departure were too many to trouble the reader with at this time.

I stored the boat with the carcasses of an hundred oxen and three hundred sheep, with bread and drink proportionable, and as much meat ready dressed as four hundred cooks could provide.

I took with me six cows and two bulls alive, with as many ewes and rams, intending to carry them in to my own country, and propagate the breed; and to feed them on board, I had a good bundle of hay and a bag of corn. I would gladly have taken a dozen of the natives; but this was a thing the emperor would by no means permit; and besides a diligent search into my pockets, his majesty engaged my honour not to carry away any of his subjects, although with their own consent and desire.

Having thus prepared all things as well as I was able, I set sail on the twenty-fourth day of September 1701, at six in the morning; and when I had gone about four leagues to the northward, the wind being at south-east, at six in the evening I descried a small island about half a league to the north-west. I advanced forward, and cast anchor on the lee-side of the island, which seemed to be uninhabited. I then took some refreshment, and went to my rest. I slept well, and as I conjecture at least six hours, for I found the day broke in two hours after I was waked. It was a clear night; I eat my breakfast before the sun was up; and heaving anchor, the wind being favourable, I steered the same course that I had done the day before, wherein I was directed by my pocket-compass. My intention was to reach if possible one of those islands, which I had reason to believe lay on the north-east of Van Diemen's land.

men's land. I discovered nothing all that day; but upon the next, about three in the afternoon, when I had by my computation made twenty-four leagues from Blefuscu, I descried a sail steering to the south-east; my course was due east. I hailed her, but could get no answer; yet I found I gained upon her, for the wind slackened. I made all the sail I could, and in half an hour she espied me; then hung out her ancient, and discharged a gun. It is not easy to express the joy I was in upon the unexpected hope of once more seeing my beloved country and the dear pledges I left in it. The ship slackened her sails, and I came up with her between five and six in the evening, September 26.; but my heart leapt within me to see her English colours. I put my cows and sheep into my coat-pocket, and got on board with all my little cargo of provisions. The vessel was an English merchantman, returning from Japan by the north and south seas; the captain Mr John Biddel of Deptford, a very civil man, and an excellent sailor. We were now in the latitude of 30 degrees south; there were about fifty men in the ship; and here I met an old comrade of mine, one Peter Williams, who gave me a good character to the captain. This gentleman treated me with kindness, and desired I would let him know what place I came from last, and whether I was bound; which I did in few words: But he thought I was raving, and that the dangers I underwent had disturbed my head; whereupon I took my black cattle and sheep out of my pocket, which, after great astonishment, clearly convinced him of my veracity. I then showed him the gold given me by the emperor of Blefuscu, together with his majesty's picture at full length, and some other rarities of that country. I gave him two purses of two hundred sprugs each, and promised, when we arrived in England, to make

make him a present of a cow and a sheep big with wool, and young.

I shall not trouble the reader with a particular account of this voyage, which was very prosperous in the most part. We arrived in the Downs on the 13th of April, 1702. I had only one misfortune that the rats on board carried away one of my sheep. I found her bones in a hole, picked clean from the flesh. The rest of my cattle I got safe on shore, and set them a grazing in a bowling-green at Greenwich, where the fineness of the grass made them feed very heartily, although I had always feared the contrary: Neither could I possibly have preferred them in so long a voyage, if the captain had not allowed me some of his best biscuit, which, rubbed in powder and mingled with water, was their constant food. The short time I continued in England, made a considerable profit by showing my cattle to many persons of quality, and others: And before I began my second voyage, I sold them for six hundred pounds. Since my last return, I find the breed is considerably increased, especially the sheep; which I hope will prove much to the advantage of the woolen manufacture by the fineness of the fleeces.

I staid but two months with my wife and family for my insatiable desire of seeing foreign countries would suffer me to continue no longer. I left fifteen hundred pounds with my wife, and fixed her in a good house at Redriff. My remaining stock I carried with me, part in money, and part in goods, in hopes to improve my fortune. My eldest uncle John had left me an estate in land, near Epping, of about thirty pounds a-year; and I had a long lease of the Black-bull in Fetter-lane, which yielded me much more: So that I was not in any danger of leaving my family upon the parish. My son John, named so after his uncle, was at the grammar school

big wool, and a towardly child. My daughter Betty
who is now well married, and hath children) was
at her needle-work. I took leave of my wife
boy and girl with tears on both sides, and
on board the Adventure, a merchant-ship of
three hundred tons, bound for Surat, captain John
Nicholas of Liverpool commander. But my account
this voyage must be referred to the Second Part
my Travels.

END of the FIRST PART.

TRAVEL S

PART II.

A VOYAGE TO BROBDINGNAG

CHAP. I.

A great storm described. The long boat sent to fetch water; the Author goes with it to discover the country. He is left on shore, is seized by one of the natives, and carried to a farmer's house. His reception there, with several accidents that happened there. A description of the inhabitants.

HAVING been condemned by nature and fortune to an active and restless life, in ten months after my return I again left my native country, and took shipping in the Downs on the 20th day of June, 1702, in the *Adventure*, commanded by Captain John Nicholas, a Cornish man, commanded bound for Surat. We had a very prosperous voyage till we arrived at the Cape of Good Hope, where we landed for fresh water; but discovering a leak we unshipped our goods, and wintered there;

Captain falling sick of an ague, we could not
reach the Cape till the end of March. We then set
out and had a good voyage until we passed the
southern points of Madagascar; but having got northward
of that island, and to about five degrees south lati-
tude, the winds, which in those seas are observed to
blow a constant equal gale between the north and
south from the beginning of December to the be-
ginning of May, on the 19th of April began to blow
with much greater violence, and more westerly than
usual, continuing so for twenty days together; du-
ring which time we were driven a little to the east
of the Molucca islands, and about three degrees
northward of the line, as our Captain found by an
observation he took the 2d of May; at which time
the wind ceased, and it was a perfect calm, where-
at I was not a little rejoiced. But he being a man
well experienced in the navigation of those seas, bid
us all prepare against a storm; which accordingly
happened the day following: For a southern wind,
called the *southern monsoon*, began to set in.

Finding it was like to overblow, we took in our
main-top-sail, and stood by to hand the fore-sail; but
making foul weather, we looked the guns were all
cast, and handed the mizzen. The ship lay very
broad off, so we thought it better spooning before
the sea than trying or hulling. We reefed the fore-
sail, and set him, we hawled aft the fore-sheet; the
helm was hard-a-weather. The ship wore bravely.
We belayed the fore-down-hall; but the sail was
split; and we hawled the yard, and got the sail into
the ship, and unbound all the things clear of it. It
was a very fierce storm; the sea broke strange and
dangerous. We hawled off upon the lanniard of
the wipstaff, and helped the man at helm. We could
not get down our top-mast, but let all stand, be-
cause she scudded before the sea very well, and we
knew

knew that the top-mast being aloft, the ship was the wholesomer, and made better way through the sea, feeling we had sea-room. When the storm was over, we set fore-sail and main-sail, and brought the ship to. Then we set the mizzen, maintop-sail, and foretop-sail. Our course was east-north-east, and the wind was at south-west. We got the star-board tack aboard, we cast off our weather-braces and lifelines, we set in the lee-braces, and hawled forward by the weather-bowlings, and hawled them tight, and layed them, and hawled over the mizzen tack windward, and kept her full and by as near as we could lie.

During this storm, which was followed by a strong wind west-south-west, we were carried by my computation about five hundred leagues to the east; that the oldest sailor on board could not tell in what part of the world we were. Our provisions held out well, our ship was staunch, and our crew all in good health; but we lay in the utmost distress for water. We thought it best to hold on the same course rather than turn more northerly, which might have brought us to the north-west parts of Great Tartary and into the frozen sea.

On the 16th day of June 1703, a boy on the top-mast discovered land. On the 17th we came in full view of a great island or continent (for we knew not whether); on the south-side whereof was a small neck of land jutting out into the sea, and a creek too shallow to hold a ship of above one hundred tons. We cast anchor within a league of this creek, and our captain sent a dozen of his men well armed in the long-boat, with vessels for water, if any could be found. I desired his leave to go with them, that I might see the country, and make what discoveries I could. When we came to land, we saw no river or spring, nor any sign of inhabitants. On

then therefore wandered on the shore to find out
some fresh water near the sea, and I walked alone
about a mile on the other side, where I observed the
country all barren and rocky. I now began to be
satisfied; and seeing nothing to entertain my curio-
sity, I returned gently down towards the creek, and
the sea being full in my view, I saw our men already
get into the boat, and rowing for life to the ship.
I was going to hollow after them, although it had
been to little purpose, when I observed an huge crea-
ture walking after them in the sea as fast as he
could: He waded not much deeper than his knees,
and took prodigious strides: But our men had the
start of him half a league, and the sea thereabout
being full of sharp pointed rocks, the monster was
not able to overtake the boat. This I was after-
wards told; for I durst not stay to see the issue of
that adventure, but ran as fast as I could the way I
went, and then climbed up a steep hill, which
gave me some prospect of the country. I found it
fully cultivated; but that which first surpris'd me
was the length of the grass, which in those grounds
seemed to be kept for hay was above twenty
feet high.

I fell into a high road, for so I took it to be, al-
though it served to the inhabitants only as a foot-path
through a field of barley. Here I walked on for
some time, but could see little on either side, it be-
ing now near harvest, and the corn rising at least
twenty feet. I was an hour walking to the end of
this field; which was fenced in with an hedge of
at least one hundred and twenty feet high, and the
trees so lofty, that I could make no computation of
their altitude. There was a stile to pass from this
field into the next: It had four steps, and a stone to
step over when you came to the uppermost. It was
impossible for me to climb this stile, because every
I step

step was six feet high, and the upper stone above me
 twenty. I was endeavouring to find some gap in the
 hedge, when I discovered one of the inhabitants attempting
 in the next field advancing towards the stile, of the same
 same size with him whom I saw in the sea pursuing our
 our boat. He appeared as tall as an ordinary steeple, and
 took about ten yards at every stride, and was as near as
 I could guess. I was struck with the most fear and
 astonishment, and ran to hide myself in the corn, from
 whence I saw him at the top of the stile, looking back
 into the next field on his right hand; and heard him
 call in a voice many times louder than a speaking
 trumpet; but the noise was so high in the air, that at
 first I certainly thought it was thunder. Whereupon
 seven others like himself came towards him with reaping
 hooks in their hands, each hook about the length of
 six scythes. These people were not so well dressed as
 the first, whose servants or labourers they seemed to
 be; for, upon some words he spoke, they all went to
 reap the corn in the field where I lay, and I was
 kept from them at as great a distance as I could, but
 was forced to move with extreme difficulty; for the
 stalks of the corn were sometimes not above a foot
 distant, so that I could hardly squeeze myself
 betwixt them. However, I made a shift to go forward
 until I came to a part of the field where the corn
 had been laid by the rain and wind: Here it was
 impossible for me to advance a step; for the stalks
 were so interwoven that I could not creep through,
 and the beards of the fallen ears so strong and pointed,
 that they pierced through my clothes into my flesh.
 At the same time I heard the reapers not above an
 hundred yards behind me. Being quite dispirited with
 toil, and wholly overcome with grief and despair, I lay
 down between two ridges, and heartily wished I might
 there end my days.

bemoaned

lamented my desolate widow and fatherless children; I lamented my own folly and wilfulness in attempting a second voyage against the advice of all my friends and relations. In this terrible agitation of mind I could not forbear thinking of Lilliput, whose inhabitants looked upon me as the greatest prodigy that ever appeared in the world; where I was able to draw an imperial fleet in my hand, and perform those other actions which will be recorded ever in the chronicles of that empire, while posterity shall hardly believe them, although attested by millions. I reflected what a mortification it must be to me to appear as inconsiderable in this nation as one single Lilliputian would be among us. What this I conceived was to be the least of my misfortunes: For, as human creatures are observed to be more savage and cruel in proportion to their bulk, what could I expect but to be a morsel in the mouth of the first among these enormous barbarians who should happen to seize me? Undoubtedly philosophers are in the right when they tell us, that nothing is great or little otherwise than by comparison: It might have pleased fortune to let the Lilliputians find some nation where the people were as diminutive with respect to them as they were to us. And who knows but that even this prodigious size of mortals might be equally overmatched in some distant part of the world, whereof we have yet no discovery.

Scared and confounded as I was, I could not forsooth go on with these reflections, when one of the reapers approaching within ten yards of the bridge where I lay, made me apprehend that with the next step I should be squashed to death under his foot, or cut in two with his reaping-hook. And therefore, when he was again about to move, I screamed as loud as fear could make me. Where-

upon the huge creature trod short, and looking round about under him for some time, at last espied me as I lay on the ground. He considered a while with the caution of one who endeavours to lay hold on a small dangerous animal in such a manner that it shall not be able either to scratch or to bite him, as I myself have sometimes done with a weasel in England. At length he ventured to take me up behind by the middle between his fore-finger and thumb, and brought me within three yards of his eyes, that he might behold my shape more perfectly. I guessed his meaning; and my good fortune gave me so much presence of mind, that I resolved not to struggle in the least as he held me in the air above sixty feet from the ground; although he grievously pinched my sides, for fear I should slip through his fingers. All I ventured, was to raise mine eyes towards the sun, and place my hands together in supplicating posture, and to speak some words in a humble melancholy tone, suitable to the condition then was in. For I apprehended every moment that he would dash me against the ground, as we usually do any little hateful animal which we have a mind to destroy. But my good star would have it, that he appeared pleased with my voice and gestures, and began to look upon me as a curiosity; much wondering to hear me pronounce articulate words, although he could not understand them. In the meantime I was not able to forbear groaning and shedding tears, and turning my head towards my sides, letting him know, as well as I could, how cruelly I was hurt by the pressure of his thumb and fingers. He seemed to apprehend my meaning; for, lifting up the lappet of his coat, he put me gently into it, and immediately ran along with me to his master, who was a substantial farmer, and the same person I had first seen in the field.

The farmer having (as I supposed by their talk) received such an account of me as his servant could give him, took a piece of a small straw, about the size of a walking-staff, and therewith lifted up the lap-pockets of my coat, which it seems he thought to be some kind of covering that nature had given me. He blew my hairs aside to take a better view of my face. He called his hinds about him, and asked them (as I afterwards learned) whether they had ever seen in the fields any little creature that resembled me? He then placed me softly on the ground upon all four; but I got immediately up, and walked slowly backwards and forwards, to let those people see I had no intent to run away. They all sat down in a circle about me, the better to observe my motions. I pulled off my hat, and made a low bow towards the farmer: I fell on my knees, and lifted up my hands and eyes, and spoke several words as loud as I could: I took a purse of gold out of my pocket, and humbly presented it to him. He received it on the palm of his hand, then applied it close to his eye to see what it was, and afterwards turned it several times with the point of a pin (which he took out of his sleeve), but could make nothing of it. Whereupon I made a sign that he should place his hand on the ground: I then took the purse, and opening it, poured all the gold into his palm. There were six Spanish pieces of four shillings each, besides twenty or thirty smaller coins. I saw him wet the tip of his little finger upon his tongue, and take up one of my largest pieces, and then another; but he seemed to be wholly ignorant what they were. He made me a sign to put them again into my purse, and the purse again into my pocket; which after offering to him several times, I thought it best to do.

The farmer by this time was convinced I must be

a rational creature. He spoke often to me, but the sound of his voice pierced my ears like that of a water-mill; yet his words were articulate enough. I answered as loud as I could in several languages, and he often laid his ear within two yards of mine, but all in vain, for we were wholly unintelligible to each other. He then sent his servants to their work, and taking his handkerchief out of his pocket, doubled and spread it on his hand, which he placed flat on the ground, with the palm upwards, making me a sign to step into it, as I could easily do, for it was not above a foot in thickness. I thought it my part to obey; and for fear of falling laid myself full length upon the handkerchief, with the remainder of which he lapped me up to the head for further security; and in this manner carried me home to his house. There he called his wife, and showed me to her; but she screamed and ran like as women in England do at the sight of a toad or spider. However, when she had a while seen my behaviour, and how well I observed the signs my husband made, she was soon reconciled, and by degrees grew extremely tender of me.

It was about twelve at noon, and a servant brought in dinner. It was only one substantial dish of meat (fit for the plain condition of an husbandman) in a dish of about four and twenty feet diameter. My company were the farmer and wife, three children, and an old grandmother. When they were seated down, the farmer placed me at some distance from him on the table, which was thirty feet high from the floor. I was in a terrible fright, and kept as close as I could from the edge for fear of falling. The wife minced a bit of meat, then crumbled some bread on a trencher, and placed it before me. I made a low bow, took out my knife and fork, and fell to eat; which gave them exceeding delight. The

He sent her maid for a small dram-cup, which held about two gallons, and filled it with drink: I took up the vessel with much difficulty in both hands, and in a most respectful manner drank to her ladyship's health, expressing the words as loud as I could in English; which made the company laugh so heartily, that I was almost deafened with the noise. This liquor tasted like a small cyder, and was not unpleasant. Then the master made me a sign to come to his trencher side; but as I walked on the table, being in great surprise all the while, as the indulgent reader will easily conceive myself to excuse, I happened to stumble against a crust, and fell flat on my face, but received no hurt. I got up immediately, and observing the good people to be in much concern, I took my hat (which I held under my arm out of good manners), and waving it over my head, made three huzzas, to show I had got no mischief by the fall. But advancing forwards toward my master (as I shall henceforth call him), his youngest son who sat next him, an arch boy of about ten years old, took me up by the legs, and held me so high in the air, that I trembled every limb; but his father snatched me from him, and at the same time gave him such a box on the left ear as would have felled an European troop of horse to the earth; ordering him to be taken from the table. But being afraid the boy might owe me a spite, and well remembering how mischievous all children among us naturally are to sparrows, rabbits, young kittens, and puppy-dogs, I fell on my knees, and pointing to the boy, made my master understand as well as I could, that I desired his son might be pardoned. The father complied, and the lad took his seat again; whereupon I went to him and kissed his hand, which my master took, and made him stroak me gently with it.

In

In the midst of dinner my mistress's favourite leapt into her lap. I heard a noise behind me like that of a dozen stocking-weavers at work; and turning my head, I found it proceeded from the purring of this animal, who seemed to be three times larger than an ox, as I computed by the view of her head and one of her paws while her mistress was feeding and stroaking her. The fierceness of this creature's countenance altogether discomposed me; although I stood at the further end of the table, above fifty feet off, and although my mistress held her fast for fear she might give a spring, and seize me in her talons. But it happened there was no danger; for the cat took not the least notice of me when my master placed me within three yards of her. And as I have been always told, and found true by experience in my travels, that flying, or discovering fear before a fierce animal, is a certain way to make it pursue or attack you; so I resolved in this dangerous juncture to show no manner of concern. I walked with intrepidity five or six times before the very head of the cat, and came within half a yard of her; whereupon she drew herself back, as if she were more afraid of me: I had less apprehension concerning the dogs, whereof three or four came into the room, as it is usual in farmers houses; one of which was a mastiff, equal in bulk to four elephants, and a grey-hound somewhat taller than the mastiff, but not so large.

When dinner was almost done, the nurse came in with a child of a year old in her arms; who immediately spied me, and began a squall that you might have heard from London-bridge to Chelsea. After the usual oratory of infants to get me for plaything, the mother out of pure indulgence took me up, and put me towards the child, who presently seized me by the middle, and got my head in his

mouth.

where I roared so loud, that the urchin was
frighted and let me drop; and I should, infallibly
broke my neck, if the mother had not held her
under me. The nurse, to quiet her babe,
made use of a rattle, which was a kind of hollow
ball filled with great stones, and fastened by a cable
to the child's waist: But all in vain; so that she was
forced to apply the last remedy by giving it suck. I
confess no object ever disgusted me so much
as the sight of her monstrous breast, which I cannot
what to compare with, so as to give the curious
under an idea of its bulk, shape, and colour. It
was prominent six feet, and could not be less than
seven in circumference. The nipple was about
the bigness of my head, and the hue both of
red and the dug so varified with spots, pimples,
and freckles, that nothing could appear more nau-
seous: for I had a near sight of her, she sitting down
more conveniently to give suck, and I standing
by the table. This made me reflect upon the fair-
ness of our English ladies, who appear so beautiful
only because they are of our own size, and
their defects not to be seen but through a magnify-
ing glass; where we find by experiment, that the
smoothest and whitest skins look rough and coarse
at a distance.

I remember when I was at Lilliput, the com-
plexions of those diminutive people appeared to me
the fairest in the world: and talking upon this sub-
ject with a person of learning there, who was an
intimate friend of mine, he said, that my face ap-
peared much fairer and smoother when he looked
at me from the ground, than it did upon a nearer
view when I took him up in my hand and brought
him close; which he confessed was at first a very
shocking sight. He said he could discover great
blemishes in my skin; that the stumps of my beard were
ten

ten times stronger than the bristles of a boar; and my complexion made up of several colours altogether disagreeable: Although I must beg leave to say for myself, that I am as fair as most of my sex in my country, and very little sun-burnt by all my travels. On the other side, discoursing of the ladies in that emperor's court, he used to tell me, one had freckles, another too wide a mouth, a third too large a nose; nothing of which I was able to distinguish. I confess this reflexion was obvious enough; which, however, I could not forbear, lest the reader might think those vast creatures were actually deformed: For I must do them justice to say they are a comely race of people; and particularly the features of my master's countenance, although he were but a farmer, when I beheld him from the height of sixty feet, appeared very well proportioned.

When dinner was done, my master went out with his labourers; and, as I could discover by his voice and gestures, gave his wife a strict charge to take care of me. I was very much tired and disposed to sleep; which my mistress perceiving, she put me to her own bed, and covered me with a clean white handkerchief, but larger and coarser than the main-sail of a man of war.

I slept about two hours, and dreamed I was at home with my wife and children; which aggravated my sorrows when I awaked, and found myself alone in a vast room, between two and three hundred feet wide, and above two hundred high, lying in a bed twenty yards wide. My mistress was gone about her household affairs, and had locked the door. The bed was eight yards from the floor. Some natural necessities required me to get down: I durst not presume to call, and if I had, it would have been in vain with such a voice as mine at so great

distance from the room where I lay to the kitchen where the family kept. While I was under these circumstances, two rats crept up the curtains, and smelling backwards and forwards on the bed: one of them came up almost to my face; whereupon I rose in a fright, and drew out my hanger to defend myself. These horrible animals had the boldness to attack me on both sides; and one of them held his fore-feet at my collar; but I had the good fortune to rip up his belly before he could do me any mischief. He fell down at my feet; and the other seeing the fate of his comrade, made his escape, but not without one good wound on the neck; which I gave him as he fled, and made the blood run trickling from him. After this exploit I walked gently to and fro on the bed, to recover my breath and loss of spirits. These creatures were of the size of a large mastiff, but infinitely more nimble and fierce: So that if I had taken off my belt before I went to sleep, I must have infallibly been torn to pieces and devoured. I measured the tail of the dead rat, and found it to be two yards long, wanting an inch; but it went against my stomach to drag the carcass off the bed, where it lay still bleeding: I observed it had yet some life, but with a strong slash cross the neck I thoroughly dispatched it.

I was soon after my mistress came into the room; who seeing me all bloody, ran and took me up in her arms. I pointed to the dead rat, smiling and making other signs to show I was not hurt; whereat she was extremely rejoiced, calling the maid to take up the dead rat with a pair of tongs, and throw it out of the window. Then she set me on a table, where I showed her my hanger all bloody, and wiping it on the lapet of my coat, returned it to the scabbard.

bard. I was pressed to do more than one thing which another could not do for me, and therefore endeavoured to make my mistress understand that I desired to be set down on the floor; which after she had done, my bashfulness would not suffer me to express myself farther than by pointing to the door and bowing several times. The good woman with much difficulty at last perceived what I would do at; and taking me up again in her hand, walked into the garden, where she set me down. I was on one side about two hundred yards, and beckoning to her not to look or to follow me, I hid myself between two leaves of sorrel, and there discharged the necessities of nature.

I hope the gentle reader will excuse me for dwelling on these and the like particulars; which, however insignificant they may appear to grovelling vulgar minds, yet will certainly help a philosopher to enlarge his thoughts and imagination, and apply them to the benefit of public as well as private life, which was my sole design in presenting this, and other accounts of my Travels to the world; where though I have been chiefly studious of truth, without neglecting any ornaments of learning or of style. The whole scene of this voyage made so strong an impression on my mind, and is so deeply fixed in my memory, that in committing it to paper, I could not omit one material circumstance: however, upon a strict review, I blotted out several passages of the moment which were in my first copy, for fear of being censured as tedious and trifling, where travellers are often, perhaps not without justice, accused.

C H A P. II.

Description of the farmer's daughter. The Author carried to a market-town, and then to the metropolis. The particulars of his journey.

MY mistress had a daughter of nine years old, a child of towardly parts for her age, very ingenious at her needle, and skilful in dressing her clothes. Her mother and she contrived to fit up the cradle for me against night. The cradle was put into a small drawer of a cabinet, and the drawer was placed upon a hanging shelf for fear of the rats. This was my bed all the time I stayed with those people, although made more convenient by degrees; I began to learn their language, and make my wants known. This young girl was so handy, that when I had once or twice pulled off my clothes before her, she was able to dress and undress me, though I never gave her that trouble when she would let me do either myself. She made me seven shirts, and some other linen of as fine cloth as could be got, which indeed was coarser than sackcloth; but these she constantly washed for me with her own hands. She was likewise my schoolmistress to teach me the language. When I pointed to any thing, she told me the name of it in her own tongue; so that in a few days I was able to call for whatever I had a mind to: She was very good-natured, and above forty feet high, being little for her age. She gave me the name of Grildrig, which the family took up, and afterwards the whole kingdom. The word imports what the Latins call *nanunculus*, the Italians *homunculetino*, and the English *mannikin*. To her I chiefly owe my preservation in that country:

try: We never parted while I was there; I call her my *Glumdalclitch* or *little nurse*: and should be guilty of great ingratitude, if I omitted this honourable mention of her care and affection towards me, which I heartily wish it lay in my power to requite as she deserves, instead of being the innocent but unhappy instrument of her disgrace, as I have too much reason to fear.

It now began to be known and talked of in the neighbourhood, that my master had found a strange animal in the field, about the bigness of a sphynx, but exactly shaped in every part like a human creature; which it likewise imitated in all its actions; seemed to speak in a little language of its own, had already learned several words of their language, went erect upon two legs, was tame and gentle, would come when it was called, do whatever it was bid, had the finest limbs in the world, and a complexion fairer than a nobleman's daughter of thirty years old. Another farmer who lived hard by, and was a particular friend of my master, came on a purpose to inquire into the truth of this story. I was immediately produced, and placed upon a table; where I walked as I was commanded, and when my hanger, put it up again, made my reverence to my master's guest, asked him in his own language how he did, and told him he was welcome; just as my little nurse had instructed me. This man, who was old and dim-sighted, put on his spectacles to behold me better, at which I could not forbear laughing very heartily; for his eyes appeared like the full moon shining into a chamber at two windows. Our people, who discovered the cause of my mirth, bore me company in laughing; at which the old fellow was fool enough to be angry and outwardly countenance. He had the character of a great miser; and to my misfortune he well deserved it.

re; I called upon a market-day in the next town, which was half an hour's riding, about two and twenty miles from our house. I guessed there was some mischief contriving, when I observed my master and his friend whispering long together, sometimes looking at me; and my fears made me fancy that I overheard and understood some of their words. The next morning Glumdalclitch my little nurse told me the whole matter, which she had cunningly picked out from her mother. The poor girl came on her bosom, and fell a-weeping with grief. She apprehended some mischief would happen to me from rude vulgar folks, who might squeeze me to death, or break one of my ribs by taking me in their hands. She had also observed how modest I was in my nature; how much I regarded my honour; and what an indignity I should conceive it to be exposed for money as a public spectacle to the meanest of the people. She thought, her pappa and mamma had promised that Grildrig should be hers; but now she found they meant to serve her as they did last year, when they pretended to give her a lamb; and yet, as soon as it was fat, sold it to a butcher. For my own part I may truly affirm, that I was less concerned than my master. I had a strong hope, which never left me, that I should one day recover my liberty; and as to the ignominy of being carried about for a monster, I considered myself to be a perfect stranger in the country; and that such a misfortune could never be charged upon me as a reproach if ever I should return to England; since the king of Great Britain himself, in my condition, must have undergone the same distress.

My master, pursuant to the advice of his friend, carried me in a box the next market-day to the

neighbouring town; and took along with him my little daughter my nurse upon a pillion behind me. The box was close on every side, with a little door for me to go in and out, and a few gimlet-holes let in air. The girl had been so careful as to put the quilt of her baby's bed into it, for me to lie down on. However, I was terribly shaken and composed in this journey, although it were but half of an hour: For the horse went about forty feet every step; and trotted so high, that the agitation was equal to the rising and falling of a ship in great storm, but much more frequent: Our journey was somewhat farther than from London to St. Albans. My master alighted at an inn which he used to frequent; and after consulting a while with the inn-keeper, and making some necessary preparations, he hired the Grultrud, or cryer, to give notice of the town, of a strange creature to be seen at the sign of the Green Eagle, not so big as a splacknag (an animal in that country very finely shaped, about six feet long), and in every part of the body resembling an human creature; could speak several words and perform an hundred diverting tricks.

I was placed upon a table in the largest room of the inn, which might be near three hundred square. My little nurse stood on a low stool close to the table, to take care of me, and direct what I should do. My master, to avoid a crowd, would suffer only thirty people at a time to see me. I walked about on the table as the girl commanded: she asked me questions as far as she knew my understanding of the language reached, and I answered them as loud as I could. I turned about several times to the company, paid my humble respects, as they were welcome; and used some other speeches I had been taught. I took up a thimble filled with liquor, which Glumdalclitch had given me for a com-

and drank their health. I drew out my hanger, and
survived with it after the manner of fencers in
England. My nurse gave me part of a straw, which
exercised as a pike, having learned the art in my
youth. I was that day shown to twelve sets of com-
pany; and as often forced to act over again the
same sopperies, until I was half dead with weariness
and vexation. For those who had seen me made
such wonderful reports, that the people were ready
to break down the doors to come in. My master,
for his own interest, would not suffer any one to
touch me except my nurse; and to prevent danger,
benches were set round the table at such a distance
as to put me out of every body's reach. However,
an unlucky schoolboy aimed a hazel-nut directly at
my head, which very narrowly missed me; other-
wise, it came with so much violence, that it would
have infallibly knocked out my brains; for it was al-
most as large as a small pumpion: But I had the sa-
tisfaction to see the young rogue well beaten, and
turned out of the room.

My master gave public notice, that he would show
me again the next market-day: And, in the mean
time, he prepared a more convenient vehicle for me,
which he had reason enough to do; for I was so ti-
red with my first journey, and with entertaining
company for eight hours together, that I could hardly
stand upon my legs or speak a word. It was at least
three days before I recovered my strength; and that
I might have no rest at home, all the neighbouring
gentlemen from an hundred miles round, hearing of
my fame, came to see me at my master's own house.
There could not be fewer than thirty persons with
their wives and children (for the country is very
populous); and my master demanded the rate of a
small room whenever he showed me at home, altho'
I were only to a single family. So that for some

time I had but little ease every day of the week (except Wednesday, which is their Sabbath), although I were not carried to the town.

My master finding how profitable I was like to be, resolved to carry me to the most considerable cities of the kingdom. Having therefore provided himself with all things necessary for a long journey, and settled his affairs at home, he took leave of his wife; and upon the 17th of August 1703, about two months after my arrival, we set out for the metropolis, situated near the middle of that empire, and about three thousand miles distance from our house. My master made his daughter Glumdalclitch ride behind him. She carried me on her lap in a bonnet tied about her waist. The girl had lined it on all sides with the softest cloth she could get, well quilted underneath; furnished it with her baby's bed, and provided me with linen and other necessaries, and made every thing as convenient as she could. We had no other company but a boy of the house, who rode after us with the luggage.

My master's design was to show me in all the towns by the way, and to step out of the road fifty or an hundred miles, to any village or person of quality's house where he might expect custom. We made easy journeys of not above seven or eighty miles a-day: For Glumdalclitch, on purpose to spare me, complained she was tired with the trotting of the horse. She often took me out of my box at my own desire, to give me air, and show me the country; but always held me fast by leading-strings. We passed over five or six rivers many degrees broader and deeper than the Nile or the Ganges; and there was hardly a rivulet so small as the Thames at London Bridge. We were ten weeks in our journey; and I was shown in eighteen large towns, besides many villages and private families.

On the 26th day of October, we arrived at the metropolis, called in their language *Lorbrulgrud*, or the centre of the Universe. My master took a lodging in the principal street of the city, not far from the royal palace; and put out bills in the usual form, providing an exact description of my person and journey. He hired a large room, between three and four hundred feet wide. He provided a table sixty feet in diameter, upon which I was to act my part; he metropallifadoed it round three feet from the edge, and as many high, to prevent my falling over. I was shown ten times a-day, to the wonder and satisfaction of all people. I could now speak the language tolerably well; and perfectly understood every thing that was spoken to me. Besides, I had learned their alphabet, and could make a shift to explain my business here and there; for Glumdalclitch had been my instructor while we were at home, and attended us during our journey. She carried a book in her pocket, not much larger than a woman's atlas; it was a common treatise for the use of young girls, giving a short account of their religion; out of this she taught me my letters, and interpreted the words.

C H A P. III.

The Author sent for to court. The queen buys him of his master the farmer, and presents him to the king. He disputes with his majesty's great scholars. An apartment at court provided for the Author. He is in high favour with the queen. He stands up for the honour of his own country. His quarrels with the queen's dwarf.

THE frequent labours I underwent every day, made in a few weeks a very considerable change

change in my health: The more my master got me, the more insatiable he grew. I had quite lost my stomach, and was almost reduced to a skeleton. The farmer observed it; and concluding I must soon die, resolved to make as good a hand of me as he could. While he was thus reasoning and resolving with himself, a Sardral, or gentleman usher, came from court, commanding my master to bring me immediately thither for the diversion of the queen and her ladies. Some of the latter had already been to see me; and reported strange things of my beauty, behaviour, and good sense. Her majesty and those who attended her, were beyond measure delighted with my demeanor. I fell on my knees and begged the honour of kissing her imperial foot; but this gracious princess held out her little finger towards me (after I was set on a table), which I embraced in both my arms, and put the tip of it, with the utmost respect, to my lip. She made me some general questions about my country and my travels, which I answered as distinctly, and in as few words as I could. She asked, whether I would be content to live at court? I bowed down to the board of the table, and humbly answered, that I was my master's slave; but if I were at my own disposal, I should be proud to devote my life at her majesty's service. She then asked my master whether he were willing to sell me at a good price? He, who apprehended I could not live a month, was ready enough to part with me, and demanded a thousand pieces of gold, which were ordered him on the spot, each piece being about the bigness of eight hundred moldorcs. But, allowing for the proportion of all things between that country and Europe, and the high price of gold among them, was hardly so great a sum as a thousand guineas would be in England. I then said to the queen, since I was now her majesty's

after got a quite a skeleton I must so f me as d resolv shier, can bring the que ad alrea ngs of er majesty ad meas my knee erial foot little fing hich I en of it, wi e me som my travel few wor be conted, ard of th y master should b 's servit are willin prehens gh to pa s of gold piece be noidores hings be igh pri a sum I thin majesty's mol

at humble creature and vassal, I must beg the favour, that Glumdalclitch, who had always tended with so much care and kindness, and understood to do it so well, might be admitted into her service, and continue to be my nurse and instructor. Her majesty agreed to my petition; and easily got the farmer's consent, who was glad enough to have his daughter preferred at court: And the poor girl herself was not able to hide her joy. My late master withdrew, bidding me farewell, saying he had left me in a good service; to which I replied not a word, only making him a slight bow.

The queen observed my coldness; and when the farmer was gone out of the apartment, asked me the reason. I made bold to tell her majesty, that I owed no other obligation to my late master, than his not mauling out the brains of a poor harmless creature found by chance in his field; which obligation was amply recompensed by the gain he had made in showing me through half the kingdom, and the price he had now sold me for: That the life I had since led, was laborious enough to kill an animal of ten times my strength: That my health was much impaired by the continual drudgery of entertaining the noble every hour of the day; and that, if my master had not thought my life in danger, her majesty would not have got so cheap a bargain. But as I was out of all fear of being ill treated under the protection of so great and good an empress, the ornament of nature, the darling of the world, the delight of her subjects, the phoenix of the creation; so I hoped my late master's apprehensions would appear to be groundless; for I already found my spirits to revive by the influence of her most august presence.

This was the sum of my speech, delivered with great improprieties and hesitation; the latter part was

was altogether framed in the style peculiar to that people, whereof I learned some phrases from Glumdalclitch while she was carrying me to court.

The queen giving great allowance for my defectiveness in speaking, was however surprised at so much wit and good sense in so diminutive an animal. She took me in her own hand, and carried me to the king, who was then retired to his cabinet. His majesty, a prince of much gravity and austere countenance, not well observing my shape at first view, asked the queen after a cold manner, how long it was since she grew fond of a splack-nuck? for such it seems he took me to be, as I lay upon my breast in her majesty's right-hand. But this princess, who hath an infinite deal of wit and humour, set me gently on my feet upon the scrutoire, and commanded me to give his majesty an account of myself, which I did in a very few words; and Glumdalclitch, who attended at the cabinet-door, and could not endure I should be out of her sight, being admitted, confirmed all that had passed from my arrival at her father's house.

The king, although he be as learned a person as any in his dominions, had been educated in the study of philosophy, and particularly mathematics; yet when he observed my shape exactly, and saw me walk erect, before I began to speak, conceived I might be a piece of clock-work, (which is in that country arrived to a very great perfection), contrived by some ingenious artist. But when he heard my voice, and found what I delivered to be regular and rational, he could not conceal his astonishment. He was by no means satisfied with the relation I gave him of the manner I came into his kingdom; but thought it a story concerted between Glumdalclitch and her father, who had taught me a set of words to make me sell at a higher price. Upon this

imagi-

to that imagination he put several other questions to me, and still received rational answers, no otherwise defective than by a foreign accent, and an imperfect knowledge in the language, with some rustic phrases which I had learned at the farmer's house, and did not suit the polite style of a court.

His majesty sent for three great scholars who were then in their weekly waiting (according to the custom in that country). These gentlemen, after they had a while examined my shape with much nicety, were of different opinions concerning me. They all agreed that I could not be produced according to the regular laws of nature; because I was not furnished with a capacity of preserving my life, either by swimming, or climbing of trees, or digging holes in the earth. They observed by my teeth, which they viewed with great exactness, that I was a carnivorous animal; yet most quadrupeds being an overmatch for me, and field-mice, with some others, too feeble, they could not imagine how I should be able to support myself, unless I fed upon snails and other insects; which they offered by many learned arguments to evince that I could not possibly do. One of these virtuosi seemed to think that I might be an embryo, or abortive birth. But this opinion was rejected by the other two, who observed my limbs to be perfect and finished, and that I had lived several years, as it was manifested from my beard; the bumps whereof they plainly discovered through a magnifying glass. They would not allow me to be a dwarf, because my littleness was beyond all degrees of comparison; for the queen's favourite dwarf, the smallest ever known in that kingdom, was near thirty feet high. After much debate, they concluded unanimously that I was only *Relplum calceath*, which is interpreted literally *lusus natura*, a determination exactly agreeable to the modern philosophy

philosophy of Europe; whose professors, disdaining the old evasion of occult causes, whereby the followers of Aristotle endeavour in vain to disguise their ignorance, have invented this wonderful solution of all difficulties, to the unspeakable advancement of human knowledge.

After this decisive conclusion, I intreated to be heard a word or two. I applied myself to the king and assured his majesty, that I came from a country which abounded with several millions of both sexes and of my own stature; where the animals, trees and houses were all in proportion; and where, in consequence, I might be as able to defend myself and to find sustenance, as any of his majesty's subjects could do here; which I took for a full answer to those gentlemen's arguments. To this they only replied with a smile of contempt; saying, that the farmer had instructed me very well in my lesson. The king, who had a much better understanding, dismissing his learned men, sent for the farmer, who by good fortune was not yet gone out of town. Having therefore first examined him privately, and then confronted him with me and the young queen, his majesty began to think that what we told might possibly be true. He desired the queen to consider, that a particular care should be taken of me, and was of opinion, that Glumdalclitch should continue in her office of tending me, because he observed we had a great affection for each other. A convenient apartment was provided for her at court; she had a sort of governess appointed to take care of her education, a maid to dress her, and two other servants for menial offices; but the care of me was wholly appropriated to herself. The queen commanded her own cabinet-maker to contrive a bed that might serve me for a bed-chamber, after the model that Glumdalclitch and I should agree upon.

man was a most ingenious artist; and according to my directions, in three weeks finished for me a wooden chamber of sixteen feet square and twelve feet high; with sash-windows, a door, and two closets, and a London bed-chamber. The board that made the ceiling was to be lifted up and down by two pulleys, to put in a bed ready furnished by her majesty's upholsterer; which Glumdalclitch took out every day to air, made it with her own hands, and hung it down at night, locked up the roof over her. A nice workman, who was famous for little curiosities, undertook to make me two chairs, with backs and frames, of a substance not unlike ivory, and two tables, with a cabinet to put my things in. The room was quilted on all sides, as well as the floor and the ceiling, to prevent any accident from the carelessness of those who carried me; and to break the force of a jolt when I went in a coach. I desired a lock for my door to prevent rats and mice from coming in: The smith, after several attempts, made the smallest that ever was seen among us; for I have known a larger at the gate of a gentleman's house in England. I made a shift to put the key in a pocket of my own, fearing Glumdalclitch might lose it. The queen likewise ordered the thinnest silks that could be gotten to make me clothes; not much thicker than an English blanket, very cumbersome until I was accustomed to them. They were after the fashion of the kingdom, partly resembling the Persian and partly the Chinese; and in a very grave and decent habit.

The queen became so fond of my company, that she could not dine without me. I had a table placed upon the same at which her majesty eat, just at her left elbow, and a chair to sit on. Glumdalclitch stood on a stool on the floor, near my table, to assist and take care of me. I had an entire set of

L. silver

silver dishes and plates, and other necessaries, which in proportion to those of the queen, were not much bigger than what I have seen in a London toy-shop for the furniture of a baby-house: These my little nurse kept in her pocket in a silver box, and gave me at meals as I wanted them; always cleaning them herself. No person dined with the queen but the two princesses royal; the elder sixteen years old, and the younger at that time thirteen and a month. Her majesty used to put a bit of meat upon one of the dishes, out of which I carved for myself; and her diversion was to see me eat in miniature. For the queen (who indeed had but a weak stomach) took up at one mouthful as much as a dozen English farmers could eat at a meal, which to me was for some time a very nauseous sight. She would craunch the wing of a lark, bones and all, between her teeth, although it were nine times as large as that of a full-grown turkey, and put a bit of bread in her mouth as big as two twelve-penny loaves. She drank out of a golden cup; above a hog's-head at a draught. Her knives were twice as long as a scythe set straight upon the handle. The spoons, forks, and other instruments, were all in the same proportion. I remember when Glumdalclitch carried me out of curiosity to see some of the tables at court, where ten or a dozen of these enormous knives and forks were lifted up together, I thought I had never till then beheld so terrible a sight.

It is the custom, that every Wednesday (which as I have before observed, was their sabbath) the king and queen, with the royal issue of both sexes, dine together in the apartment of his majesty; to whom I was now become a great favourite; and at these times my little chair and table were placed at the left hand before one of the salt-fellers. This princess took a pleasure in conversing with me; inquiring

the manners, religion, laws, government, and
of Europe; wherein I gave him the best ac-
count I was able. His apprehension was so clear,
and his judgment so exact, that he made very wise
reflections and observations upon all I said. But I
confess, that after I had been a little too copious in
telling of my own beloved country; of our trade,
wars by sea and land; of our schisms in reli-
gion, and parties in the state; the prejudices of his
education prevailed so far, that he could not forbear
taking me up in his right hand, and stroking me
gently with the other, after an hearty fit of laugh-
ing, asked me whether I was a Whig or a Tory.
Then turning to his first minister, who waited behind
me with a white staff, near as tall as the main-mast
of the Royal Sovereign, he observed, how contemp-
tible a thing was human grandeur, which could be
mocked by such diminutive insects as I: And yet,
said he, I dare engage, these creatures have their
degrees and distinctions of honour; they contrive little
cells and burrows, that they call houses and cities;
they make a figure in dress and equipage; they love,
they fight, they dispute, they cheat, they betray.
And thus he continued on, while my colour came
and went several times with indignation, to hear our
noble country, the mistress of arts and arms, the
bourgeoisie of France, the arbitress of Europe, the seat
of virtue, piety, honour, and truth, the pride and
glory of the world, so contemptuously treated.
But as I was not in a condition to resent inju-
ries, so, upon mature thoughts, I began to doubt
whether I was injured or no. For after having
been accustomed several months to the sight and
converse of this people, and observed every object
upon which I cast mine eyes to be of proportion-
able magnitude, the horror I had first conceived from
their bulk and aspect was so far worn off, that if I

had then beheld a company of English lords and ladies in their finery and birth-day clothes, acting their several parts in the most courtly manner strutting, and bowing, and prating, to say the truth I should have been strongly tempted to laugh much at them as the king and his grantees did me. Neither indeed could I forbear smiling at myself, when the queen used to place me upon her hand towards a looking-glass, by which both our person appeared before me in full view together; and there could nothing be more ridiculous than the comparison: So that I really began to imagine myself dwindled many degrees below my usual size.

Nothing angered and mortified me so much as the queen's dwarf, who being of the lowest stature that was ever in that country (for I verily think he was not full thirty feet high), became so insolent at finding a creature so much beneath him, that he would always affect to swagger and look big as he passed by me in the queen's antichamber, while I was standing on some table talking with the lords or ladies of the court, and he seldom failed of a smart word or two upon my littleness; against which I could only revenge myself by calling him brother, challenging him to wrestle, and such repartees as are usual in the mouths of court-pages. One day at dinner, this malicious little cub was so nettled with something I had said to him, that raising himself upon the frame of her majesty's chair, he took me up by the middle, as I was sitting down, not thinking any harm, and let me drop into a large silver bowl of cream, and then ran away as fast as he could. I fell over head and ears; and if I had not been a good swimmer, it might have gone very hard with me; for Glumdalclitch in that instant happened to be at the other end of the room, and the queen was in such a fright, that she wanted presence of mind

to assist me. But my little nurse ran to my
elf, and took me out after I had swallowed above
wart of cream. I was put to bed; however, I re-
ed no other damage than the loss of a suit of
shes, which was utterly spoiled. The dwarf was
ndly whipped, and as a further punishment, for-
to drink up the bowl of cream into which he
thrown me; neither was he ever restored to fa-
ur: For soon after the queen bestowed him on a
y of high quality, so that I saw him no more, to
very great satisfaction; for I could not tell to
at extremity such a malicious urchin might have
ried his resentment.

He had before served me a scurvy trick, which
the queen a laughing, although at the same time
was heartily vexed, and would have immediate-
cashiered him, if I had not been so generous as
intercede. Her majesty had taken a marrow-
ne upon her plate, and after knocking out the
ile I w
arrow, placed the bone again in the dish erect as
lood before; the dwarf watching his opportu-
y, while Glumdalclitch was gone to the side-
ard, mounted the stool that she stood on to take
re of me at meals, took me up in both hands, and
squeezing my legs together, wedged them into the
arrow-bone above my waist; where I stuck for
me time, and made a very ridiculous figure. I
lieve it was near a minute before any one knew
hat was become of me; for I thought it below me
cry out. But as princes seldom get their meat
ct, my legs were not scalded, only my stockings
and breeches in a sad condition. The dwarf, at my
reaty, had no other punishment than a sound
whipping.

I was frequently rallied by the queen on ac-
ount of my fearfulness; and she used to ask me,
whether the people of my country were as great

cowards as myself? The occasion was this, the kingdom is much pestered with flies in summer; and these odious insects, each of them as big as a Dunstable lark, hardly gave me any rest while I sat at dinner, with their continual humming and buzzing about mine ears. They would sometimes alight upon my victuals, and leave their loathsome excrement or spawn behind, which to me was very visible, although not to the natives of that country, whose large optics were not so acute as mine in viewing smaller objects. Sometimes they would fix upon my nose or forehead, where they stung me to the quick, smelling very offensively; and I could easily trace that viscous matter, which our naturalists tell us enables those creatures to walk with their feet upwards on a ceiling. I had much ado to defend myself against these detestable animals, and could not forbear starting when they came on my face. It was the common practice of the dwarf to catch a number of these insects in his hand, as school-boys do among us, and let them out suddenly under my nose, on purpose to frighten me, and divert the queen. My remedy was to cut them in pieces with my knife as they flew in the air; wherein my dexterity was much admired.

I remember one morning when Glumdalclitch had set me in my box upon a window, as she usually did in fair days to give me air (for I durst not venture to let the box be hung on a nail out of the window, as we do with cages in England), after I had lifted up one of my sashes, and sat down at my table to eat a piece of sweet cake for my breakfast, above twenty wasps, allured by the smell, came flying into the room, humming louder than the drones of as many bagpipes. Some of them seized my cake, and carried it piece-meal away; others flew about my head and face, confounding me with the noise,

putting me in the utmost terror of their stings. However, I had the courage to rise and draw my sword, and attack them in the air. I dispatched some of them, but the rest got away, and I presently shut my window. These insects were as large as eagles; I took out their stings, found them an inch and an half long, and as sharp as needles. I carefully preserved them all; and having since shown them with some other curiosities in several parts of Europe, upon my return to England, I gave three of them to Gresham-college, and kept the fourth to myself.

C H A P. IV.

Country described. A proposal for correcting modern maps. The king's palace, and some account of the metropolis. The Author's way of travelling. The chief temple described.

Now intend to give the reader a short description of this country, as far as I travelled in it, which was not above two thousand miles round London the metropolis. For the queen, whom I always attended, never went further when she accompanied the king in his progresses; and there he remained until his majesty returned from viewing his dominions. The whole extent of this prince's dominions reached about six thousand miles in length, and three to five in breadth. From whence I cannot conclude, that our geographers of Europe are in a great error, by supposing nothing but sea between Japan and California: For it was ever my opinion, that there must be a balance of earth to counterpoise the great continent of Tartary; and therefore they ought to correct their maps and charts, by joining this vast track of land to the north-west parts

parts of America; wherein I shall be ready to lend them my assistance.

The kingdom is a peninsula, terminated to the north-east by a ridge of mountains thirty miles high, which are altogether impassable by reason of the volcanos upon the tops. Neither do the most learned know what sort of mortals inhabit beyond those mountains, or whether they be inhabited at all. On the three other sides it is bounded by the ocean. There is not one sea-port in the whole kingdom, and those parts of the coasts into which the rivers issue are so full of pointed rocks, and the sea generally so rough, that there is no venturing with the smallest of their boats; so that these people are wholly excluded from any commerce with the rest of the world. But the large rivers are full of vessels, and abound with excellent fish; for they seldom get any from the sea, because the sea-fish are of the same size with those in Europe, and consequently not worth catching; whereby it is manifest that nature, in the production of plants and animals of so extraordinary a bulk, is wholly confined to this continent; of which I leave the reasons to be determined by philosophers. However, now and then they take a whale that happens to be dashed against the rocks, which the common people feast on heartily. These whales I have known so large that a man could hardly carry one upon his shoulders; and sometimes for curiosity they are brought in hampers to Lorbrulgrud: I saw one of them in dish at the king's table, which passed for a rarity, but I did not observe he was fond of it; for I think indeed the bigness disgusted him, although I have seen one somewhat larger in Greenland.

The country is well inhabited, for it contains thirty-one cities, near an hundred walled towns, and a great number of villages. To satisfy my curiosity

er, it may be sufficient to describe Lorbrulgrud. The city stands upon almost two equal parts on either side the river that passes through. It contains above eighty thousand houses, and about six hundred thousand inhabitants. It is in length five glomglungs (which make about fifty-four English miles), and two and a half in breadth, as I measured it myself in the royal map made by the king's order, which was laid on the ground on purpose for me, and extended an hundred feet: I paced the diameter and circumference several times barefoot, and computing by the scale, measured it pretty exactly.

The king's palace is no regular edifice, but an irregular building about seven miles round. The rooms are generally two hundred and forty feet high, and broad and long in proportion. A lady was allowed to Glumdalclitch and me, where her governess frequently took her out to see the shops, or go among the shops; and I was always of the party, carried in my box; although the girl at her own desire would often take me out, and hold me in her hand, that I might more conveniently see the houses and the people as we passed along the streets. I reckoned our coach to be about a third part of Westminster-hall, but not altogether so large; however I cannot be very exact. One day the governess ordered our coachman to stop at several shops; where the beggars watching their opportunity, crowded to the sides of the coach, and presented me the most horrible spectacles that ever an European eye beheld. There was a woman with a cancer in her breast, swelled to a monstrous size, full of holes; in two or three of which I could have easily crept, and covered my whole body. There was a fellow with a wen in his neck larger than a woolpack; and another with a couple of wooden

wooden legs, each about twenty feet high. The most hateful sight of all was the lice crawling on their clothes. I could see distinctly the limbs of these vermin with my naked eye, much better than those of an European louse through a microscope, and their snouts with which they routed swine. They were the first I had ever beheld; I should have been curious enough to dissect one of them if I had had proper instruments (which I luckily left behind me in the ship), although indeed the sight was so nauseous, that it perfectly turned my stomach.

Beside the large box in which I was usually carried, the queen ordered a smaller one to be made for me, of about twelve feet square and ten high, for the convenience of travelling; because the other was somewhat too large for Glumdalclitch's lap, and cumbersome in the coach: it was made by the best artist, whom I directed in the whole contrivance. This travelling closet was an exact square, with a window in the middle of three of the squares, and each window was laticed with iron-wire on the outside to prevent accidents in long journies. On the four sides, which had no window, two strong staples were fixed, through which the person that carried me, when I had a mind to be on horseback, put a leather thorn-belt, and buckled it about his waist. The same was always the office of some grave trusty servant, in whom I could confide, whether I attended the king and queen in their progresses, or were disposed to see the gardens, or pay a visit to some great lord, or minister of state in the court, when Glumdalclitch happened to be out of order: for I soon began to be known and esteemed among the great officers; I suppose more upon account of their majesty's favour than any merit of my own. In journeyes, when I was weary of the coach, a servant

back would buckle on my box, and place it on a high. I then before him; and there I had a full prospect of the country on three sides from my three windows. I had in this closet a field-bed and a hamper hung from the ceiling, two chairs and a table screwed to the floor, to prevent being tossed by the agitation of the horse or the coach. Having been long used to sea-voyages, those motions, although sometimes very violent, did not which I much discompose me.

Whenever I had a mind to see the town, it was easily turned in my travelling-closet; which Glumdal-hair held in her lap in a kind of open sedan, after the usual fashion of the country, borne by four men, and attended by two others in the queen's livery. The queen, a high, stately, who had often heard of me, were very curious to crowd about the sedan; and the girl was in her lap, so pleasant enough to make the bearers stop, and by the same time in her hand that I might be more conveniently seen.

With a wish I was very desirous to see the chief temple, and especially the tower belonging to it, which is reckoned the highest in the kingdom. Accordingly one day my nurse carried me thither; but I may truly say I came back disappointed, for the height is not above three thousand feet, reckoning from the ground to the highest pinnacle-top; which, allowing for the difference between the size of those people and us in Europe, is no great matter for admiration, nor attended to equal in proportion (if I rightly remember) to Salisbury steeple. But, not to detract from a name so great, to which during my life I shall acknowledge myself extremely obliged, it must be allowed, that whatever this famous tower wants in height, is amply made up in beauty and strength: For the walls of their temple are near an hundred feet thick, built of hewn stone, and each is about forty feet square, and adorned

on all sides with statues of gods and emperors, in marble larger than the life, placed in their several niches. I measured a little finger which fallen down from one of those statues, and lay perceived among some rubbish, and found it exactly four feet and an inch in length. Glumdalclitch wrapped it up in her handkerchief, and carried it home in her pocket, to keep among other trinkets, of which the girl was very fond, as children at her age usually are.

The king's kitchen is indeed a noble building vaulted at top, and about six hundred feet high. The great oven is not so wide by ten paces as the cupola at St Paul's; for I measured the latter purpose after my return. But if I should describe the kitchen-grate, the prodigious pots and kettles, the joints of meat turning on the spits, with many other particulars, perhaps I should be hardly believed; at least a severe critic would be apt to think I enlarged a little, as travellers are often suspected to do. To avoid which censure, I fear I have run too much into the other extreme; and that, if a treatise should happen to be translated into the language of Brobdingnag (which is the general name of that kingdom), and transmitted thither, the king and his people would have reason to complain that I had done them an injury, by a false and diminutive representation.

His majesty seldom keeps above six hundred horses in his stables: They are generally from fifty-four to sixty feet high. But when he goes abroad on solemn days, he is attended for state by a militia guard of five hundred horse, which indeed I thought was the most splendid sight that could be ever beheld, when I saw part of his army in battalia; whereof I shall find another occasion to speak.

C H A P. V.

*several adventures that happened to the Author.
the execution of a criminal. The Author shows his
skill in navigation.*

SHOULD have lived happy enough in that country, if my littleness had not exposed me to several ridiculous and troublesome accidents; some of which I shall venture to relate. Glumdalclitch offered me into the gardens of the court in my silver box, and would sometimes take me out of her hand, or set me down to the ground. I remember, before the dwarf left the queen, she allowed us one day into those gardens, and my dwarf having set me down, he and I being close together near some dwarf apple-trees, I must needs have been suspected of my wit by a silly allusion between him and the queen, which happens to hold in their language as it does in ours. Whereupon the malicious rogue, catching his opportunity when I was walking unattended, took one of them, shook it directly over my head, by which a dozen apples, each of them near as large as a Bristol barrel, came tumbling about my ears; and some of them hit me on the back as I chanced to pass, and knocked me down flat on my face; but I received no other hurt, and the dwarf was pardoned at my desire, because I had given the provocation.

Another day Glumdalclitch left me on a smooth plot to divert myself, while she walked at some distance with her governess. In the mean time she suddenly fell such a violent shower of hail, that I was immediately by the force of it struck to the ground: And when I was down, the hail-stones

M

gave

gave me such cruel bangs all over the body, as had been pelted with tennis-balls; however, I made a shift to creep on all four, and shelter myself lying flat on my face on the lee-side of a border of lemon-thyme, but so bruised from head to foot that I could not go abroad in ten days. Neither is it at all to be wondered at; because nature in this country observing the same proportion through her operations, a hail-stone is near eighteen hundred times as large as one in Europe; which I assert upon experience, having been so curious to weigh and measure them.

But a more dangerous accident happened to me in the same garden, when my little nurse, believing she had put me in a secure place, which I often treated her to do, that I might enjoy my thoughts, and having left my box at home to avoid the trouble of carrying it, went to another part of the garden with her governess and some ladies of her acquaintance. While she was absent and I was of hearing, a small white spaniel belonging to one of the chief gardeners, having got by accident into the garden, happened to range near the place where I lay. The dog following the scent, came directly up, and taking me in his mouth, ran straight to his master wagging his tail, and set me gently on the ground. By good fortune he had been so well taught that I was carried between his teeth without the least hurt, or even tearing my clothes. But the poor gardener, who knew me well, and had a great kindness for me, was in a terrible fright. He gently took me up in both his hands, and asked me how I did; but I was so amazed and out of breath, that I could not speak a word. In a few minutes I came to myself, and he carried me safe to my little nurse, who by this time had returned to the place where she left me, and was in cruel agonies when I did not appear.

body, as
ever, I m
er myself
a border
to foot
either is
ture in
through
ghteen h
which I
o curious
ened to
se, believ
h I often
oy my o
me to an
other part
me ladies
sent and
ging to
accident
place wh
ame direc
raight to
ently on
well tang
without
But the p
a great k
He gen
d me how
eath, the
utes I can
little num
place wh
en I did
appe

at, nor answer when she called; she severely
manded the gardener on account of his dog.
the thing was hushed up, and never known at
; for the girl was afraid of the queen's anger;
truly as to myself, I thought it would not be
my reputation that such a story should go a-

This accident absolutely determined Glumdal-
ch never to trust me abroad for the future out of
sight. I had been long afraid of this resolution;
therefore concealed from her some little un-
y adventures that happened in those times when
as left by myself. Once a kite hovering over the
men made a stoop at me, and if I had not reso-
ly drawn my hanger, and run under a thick es-
er, he would have certainly carried me away in
alons. Another time, walking to the top of a
mole-hill, I fell to my neck in the hole thro'
ch that animal had cast up the earth; and coin-
some lie not worth remembering, to excuse my-
for spoiling my clothes. I likewise broke my
thin against the shell of a snail, which I hap-
ed to stumble over as I was walking alone, and
inking on poor England.

I cannot tell whether I were more pleased or mor-
ed, to observe in those solitary walks, that the
aller birds did not appear to be at all afraid of
; but would hop about within a yard's distance,
king for worms and other food, with as much
fference and security as if no creature at all were
ar them. I remember a thrush had the confidence
snatch out of my hand with his bill a piece of
he that Glumdalclitch had just given me for my
akfast. When I attempted to catch any of these
s, they would boldly turn against me, endea-
uring to pick my fingers, which I durst not ven-
se within their reach; and then they would hop

back unconcerned to hunt for worms or snails they did before. But one day I took a thick cud and threw it with all my strength so luckily at a net, that I knocked him down, and seizing him by the neck with both my hands, ran with him in triumph to my nurse. However, the bird, who had only been stunned, recovering himself, gave me many boxes with his wings on both sides of my head and body, although I held him at arms length, and was out of the reach of his claws, that I was twice times thinking to let him go. But I was soon relieved by one of our servants, who wrung off the bird's neck; and I had him next day for dinner by the queen's command. This linnet, as near as I can remember, seemed to be somewhat larger than an English swan.

The maids of honour often invited Glumdalclitch to their apartments, and desired she would bring her along with her, on purpose to have the pleasure of seeing and touching me. They would often lay me naked from top to toe, and lay me at full length in their bosoms, wherewith I was much disgusted because, to say the truth, a very offensive smell came from their skins; which I do not mention or interpose to the disadvantage of those excellent ladies, to whom I have all manner of respect: But I conceive, that my sense was more acute in proportion to my littleness; and that those illustrious persons were more disagreeable to their lovers, or to each other, than people of the same quality are with us in our land. And after all, I found their natural smell much more supportable than when they used perfumes, under which I immediately swooned away. I cannot forget, that an intimate friend of mine, Lilliput, took the freedom in a warm day, when he had used a good deal of exercise, to complain of a strong smell about me, although I am as little fault-

way as most of my sex. But I suppose his fastidiousness of smelling was as nice with regard to me as was to that of this people. Upon this point I could not forbear doing justice to the queen my mistress, and Glumdalclitch my nurse, whose persons were as sweet as those of any lady in England. That which gave me most uneasiness among these savages was the loss of honour, when my nurse carried me to visit the king and queen, was to see them use me without any manner of ceremony, like a creature who had no sort of consideration. For they would strip themselves to the waist, and put on their smocks in my presence, while I was placed on the toilet directly before their naked bodies; which, I am sure, to me was very far more shocking than being a tempting sight, or from giving me any violent emotions than those of horror and disgust. Their skins appeared so coarse and uneven, so variously coloured when I saw them near, with a mole as large as a trencher, and hairs as thick as packthreads; to say nothing further concerning the rest of their persons. I often observed that they did not at all scruple, while I was by, to charge what they had drank, to the quantity of two hogheads, in a vessel that held above a tun. The handsomest among these maids of honour, a pleasant frolicksome girl of sixteen, would sometimes set me astride upon one of her nipples, with many other tricks, wherein the reader will excuse me for not being over particular. But I was much displeased, that I intreated Glumdalclitch to contrive some excuse for not seeing that young lady any more.

One day a young gentleman, who was nephew to my nurse's governess, came and pressed them both to see an execution. It was of a man who had murdered one of that gentleman's intimate acquaintance. Glumdalclitch was prevailed on to be of the company,

pany, very much against her inclination; for she was naturally tender hearted: And as for myself, although I abhorred such kind of spectacles, yet curiosity tempted me to see something that I thought must be extraordinary. The malefactor was first put in a chair upon a scaffold erected for that purpose, and his head cut off at one blow with a sword about forty feet long. The veins and arteries spouted up such a prodigious quantity of blood, and so high in the air, that the great *Fet d'eau* at Versailles was not equal for the time it lasted; and the heat when it fell on the scaffold floor, gave such a bound as made me start although I were at least half an English mile distant.

The queen, who often used to hear me talk of sea-voyages, and took all occasions to divert herself when I was melancholy, asked me whether I understood how to handle a sail or an oar; and whether a little exercise of rowing might not be convenient for my health. I answered, that I understood both very well. For although my proper employment had been to be surgeon or doctor to the ship, yet I often upon a pinch I was forced to work like a common mariner. But I could not see how this could be done in their country, where the smallest vessel was equal to a first rate man of war among us; and such a boat as I could manage, would never live in any of their rivers: Her majesty said, if I would contrive a boat, her own joiner should make it, and she would provide a place for me to sail in. The joiner was an ingenious workman; and by my instructions, in ten days finished a pleasure-boat with all its tackling, able conveniently to hold eight Europeans. When it was finished, the queen was delighted, that she ran with it in her lap to the king, who ordered it to be put into a cistern full of water with me in it, by way of trial; where I could manage

on; for I gave my two sculls or little oars for want of
for my own use. But the queen had before contrived another
cles, yet I thought it best. She ordered the joiner to make a wooden
at I thought of three hundred feet long, fifty broad, and
or was five feet deep; which being well pitched to prevent
at purpose, was placed on the floor along the wall, in
a sword-room of the palace. It had a cock near
teries for bottom, to let out the water when it began to
ood, and a spout; and two servants could easily fill it in half
at Versailles. Here I often used to row for my own di-
and the health, as well as that of the queen and her ladies,
ch a bound thought themselves agreeably entertained with
east half skill and agility. Sometimes I would put up my
and then my business was only to steer, while
e talk of the ladies gave me a gale with their fans; and when
diverted, they were weary, some of the pages would blow my
her I understood forward with their breath, while I showed my
and whether by steering starboard or larboard as I pleased.
convenient when I had done, Glumdalclitch always carried
understood how to put my boat into her closet, and hung it on a nail
employment.
the ship, in this exercise I once met an accident which had
like a comet to have cost me my life. For one of the pages
w this coming put my boat into the trough, the governess
allest when she attended Glumdalclitch very officiously lifted
ing us; and she put me in the boat; but I happened to
never live through her fingers, and should infallibly have
would come down forty feet upon the floor, if by the luc-
e it, and by chance in the world I had not been stopped by
. The working-pin that stuck in the good gentlewoman's
by my coachman: the head of the pin passed between my
e-boat wheel and the waistband of my breeches; and thus I
d eight hours held by the middle in the air until Glumdal-
queen was sent to my relief.
to the king. Another time one of the servants, whose office it
all of was to fill my trough every third day with fresh wa-
I could not was so careless as to let a huge frog (nor percei-
managing ving

ving it) slip out of the pail. The frog lay concealed until I was put into my boat, but then feeling a resting place, climbed up, and made it lean so much on one side, that I was forced to balance it with my weight on the other to prevent overturning. When the frog was got in, it hopped at once to the length of the boat, and then over my head, backwards and forwards, daubing my face and clothes with its odious slime. The largeness of its feet made it appear the most deformed animal that can be conceived. However, I desired Glumdalclitch to let me deal with it alone. I banged it a good while with one of my sculls, and at last forced it to get out of the boat.

But the greatest danger I ever underwent in that kingdom was from a monkey, who belonged to one of the clerks of the kitchen. Glumdalclitch had locked me up in her closet while she went for some where upon business or a visit. The weather being very warm, the closet window was left open, as was also the windows and the door of my bigger box, in which I usually lived, because of its largeness and conveniency. As I sat quietly meditating at my table, I heard something bounce in at the closet window, and skip about from one side to the other, whereat, although I were much alarmed, yet I was not stirred to look out, but not stirring from my seat, and then I saw this frolicksome animal, frisking and leaping up and down, until at last he came to my box, which he seemed to view with great pleasure and curiosity, peeping in at the door and every window. I retreated to the farther corner of my room or box; but the monkey looking in at every crevice put me into such a fright, that I wanted very much of mind to conceal myself under the bed, as I might easily have done. After some time spent in peeping, grinning, and chattering, he at last espied me.

lay con- reaching one of his paws in at the door, as a cat
hen feel- when she plays with a mouse, although I often
lean so m- ed place to avoid him, he at length seized the
ce it with of my coat (which being made of that coun-
overturn- k, was very thick and strong), and dragged me
at once He took me up in his right fore-foot, and
y head, be- me as a nurse does a child she is going to
e and clo- ; just as I have seen the same sort of creature
of its feat- with a kitten in Europe; and when I offered to
mal that- gle, he squeezed me so hard, that I thought it
mdalclit- prudent to submit. I have good reason to be-
a good w- that he took me for a young one of his own
ced it to- es, by his often stroaking my face very gently
his other paw. In these diversions he was in-
went in- rupted by a noise at the closet-door, as if some-
onged to- were opening it; whereupon he suddenly leap-
dalclit- up to the window at which he had come in, and
e went fo- upon the leads and gutters, walking upon
eather be- legs, and holding me in the fourth, until he
open, as- bered up to a roof that was next to ours. I
igger box- Glumdalclitch give a shriek at the moment he
argene- carrying me out. The poor girl was almost
ating at- ed: That quarter of the palace was all in
ne closet- uproar; the servants ran for ladders; the mon-
to the oth- was seen by hundreds in the court, sitting upon
ed, yet I- dge of a building, holding me like a baby in
om my se- of his fore-paws and feeding me with the other,
, frisking- ramming into my mouth some victuals he had
came to- ezed out of the bag on one side of his chaps,
reat, pleas- patting me when I would not eat; whereat many
nd every- the rabble below could not forbear laughing:
r of my re- do I think they ought justly to be blamed;
at every- without question, the sight was ridiculous enough
ted pres- every body but myself. Some of the people threw
ed, as I- ones, hoping to drive the monkey down; but
pent in pe- was strictly forbidden, or else very probably my
st espied- as had been dashed out.

The

The ladders were now applied, and mounted several men; which the monkey observing, and finding himself almost encompassed, not being able to make speed enough with his three legs, let me down on a ridge-tyle, and made his escape. Here I stood for some time five hundred yards from the ground, expecting every moment to be blown down by the wind, or to fall by my own giddiness, and come tumbling over and over from the ridge to the eaves. An honest lad, one of my nurse's footmen, climbed up, and putting me into his breeches pocket brought me down safe.

I was almost choaked with the filthy stuff the monkey had crammed down my throat, but my little nurse picked it out of my mouth with a fine needle; and then I fell a vomiting, which gave me great relief. Yet I was so weak and bruised in the sides with the squeezes given me by this odious animal, that I was forced to keep my bed a fortnight. The king, queen, and all the court, sent every day to inquire after my health; and her majesty made me several visits during my sickness. The monkey was killed, and an order made that no such animal should be kept about the palace.

When I attended the king after my recovery, to return him thanks for his favours, he was pleased to reward me a good deal upon this adventure. He asked me what my thoughts and speculations were while I lay in the monkey's paw; how I liked the victuals he gave me, his manner of feeding; and whether the fresh air on the roof had sharpened my stomach. He desired to know what I would have done upon such an occasion in my own country. I told her majesty, that in Europe we had no monkeys, except such as were brought for curiosities from distant places; and so small, that I could deal with a dozen of them together if they presumed to attack

as for that monstrous animal with whom I was
mounted, I was engaged (it was indeed as large as an ele-
phant, and if my fears had not suffered me to think so far
being able to make use of my hanger (looking fiercely, and
let me bring my hand upon the hilt as I spoke), when he
Here I put his paw into my chamber, perhaps I should
the ground given him such a wound, as would have made
down by the side of the river, as would have made
I came to him. This I delivered in a firm tone, like a
the eyes of a man who was jealous lest his courage should be
men, climbing in question. However, my speech produced
ches upon the ground else besides a loud laughter; which all the
it due to his majesty from those about him
tuff then not make them contain. This made me re-
out my how vain an attempt it is for a man to endea-
with a do to do himself honour among those who are out
which gave degree of equality or comparison with him.
ruined in yet I have seen the moral of my own behaviour
is odious frequent in England since my return; where a
a fortune contemptible varlet, without the least title to
ent every person, wit, or common sense, shall presume
majesty to mix with importance, and put himself upon a foot
The most the greatest person of the kingdom.
such an as was every day furnishing the court with some
alous story; and Glumdalclitch, although she
recovery came to excess, yet was arch enough to inform
was pleased when I committed any folly that she
re. He thought would be diverting to her majesty. The
as were who had been out of order, was carried by her
d the vic-ness to take the air about an hour's distance,
and whe-ty miles from town. They alighted out of the
my stom- near a small foot-path in a field; and Glum-
ve done ch setting down my travelling box, I went out
y. I told to walk. There was a cow-dung in the path,
onkeys, ex- must needs try my activity by attempting to
s from over it. I took a run, but unfortunately jump-
with a de- ort, and found myself just in the middle up to
to attack my

my knees. I waded through with some difficulty, and one of the footmen wiped me as clean as could with his handkerchief, for I was filthy and mired; and my nurse confined me to my box when we returned home, where the queen was informed of what had passed, and the footmen spent it about the court; so that all the mirth for several days was at my expence.

C H A P. VI.

Several contrivances of the Author to please the king and queen. He shows his skill in music. The king inquires into the state of England, which the Author relates to him. The king's observations thereon.

I USED to attend the king's levee once or twice a-week, and had often seen him under the barber's hand, which indeed was at first very terrible to behold; for the razor was almost twice as large as an ordinary scythe. His majesty, according to the custom of the country, was only shaved twice a week. I once prevailed on the barber to give me some of the suds or lather, out of which I squeezed forty or fifty of the strongest stumps of hair, then took a piece of fine wood, and cut it like the back of a comb, making several holes in it at equal distances, with as small a needle as I could get from Glumdalclitch. I fixed in the stumps so artfully, scraping and sloping them with my knife towards the points, that I made a very tolerable comb; which was a seasonable supply, my own being so soon broken in the teeth, that it was almost useless. Neither did I know any artist in that country

ne diffic and exact, as would undertake to make me an-
 clean and this puts me in mind of an amusement
 s filthy and I spent many of my leisure hours. I desired
 my box queen's woman to save for me the combings of
 was foot majesty's hair; whereof in time I got a good
 otmen fr quantity; and consulting with my friend the cabi-
 rth for maker, who had received general orders to do
 jobs for me, I directed him to make two chair-
 es, no larger than those I had in my box, and
 to bore little holes with a fine awl round those
 where I designed the backs and seats; through
 please the holes I wove the strongest hairs I could pick
 music. just after the manner of cane-chairs in England.
 nd, which they were finished, I made a present of them
 s observat majesty, who kept them in her cabinet, and
 to show them for curiosities; as indeed they
 the wonder of every one that beheld them.
 once or queen would have had me sit upon one of
 under the chairs, but I absolutely refused to obey her;
 t very terrible I would rather die a thousand deaths, than
 twice as a dishonourable part of my body on those pre-
 according hairs that once adorned her majesty's head.
 have twice these hairs (as I had always a mechanical ge-
 er to give I likewise made a neat little purse about five
 which I long, with her majesty's name decyphered in
 ps of hair letters; which I gave to Glumdalclitch by the
 cut it like's consent. To say the truth, it was more for
 s in it at than use, being not of strength to bear the
 could get out of the larger coins; and therefore she kept
 s so artificing in it but some little toys that girls are fond
 knife to
 e comb; w king, who delighted in music, had frequent
 being so parts at court, to which I was sometimes carried,
 almost use set in my box on a table to hear them: But the
 hat count was so great that I could hardly distinguish the
 I am confident, that all the drums and trum-

pets of a royal army, beating and sounding together just at your ears, could not equal it. My practice was to have my box removed from the place where the performers sat as far as I could, then to shut the doors and windows of it, and draw the window curtains; after which I found their music not disagreeable.

I had learned in my youth to play a little on the spinet. Glumdalclitch kept one in her chamber, and a master attended twice a-week to teach her to play; she called it a spinet, because it somewhat resembled that instrument, and was played upon in the same manner. A fancy came into my head, that I would entertain the king and queen with an English air upon this instrument. But this appeared extremely difficult, for the spinet was near sixty feet long, each key being almost a foot wide, so that with my arms extended I could not reach to above five keys, to press them down required a good smart stroke with my fist, which would be too great a labour and to no purpose. The method I contrived for this: I prepared two round sticks about the bigness of common cudgels; they were thicker at one end than the other, and I covered the thicker end with a piece of a mouse's skin, that, by rapping on that, I might neither damage the tops of the keys, nor interrupt the sound. Before the spinet a bench was placed about four feet below the keys, and I sat upon the bench. I ran sideling upon it that way and this as fast as I could, banging the proper notes with my two sticks, and made a shift to play a tune to the great satisfaction of both their majesties: it was the most violent exercise I ever underwent, and yet I could not strike above sixteen keys, consequently play the base and treble together as other artists do; which was a great disadvantage to my performance.

king, who, as I before observed, was a prince of excellent understanding, would frequently order that I should be brought in a box, and set upon the top of his closet: He would then command me to take one of my chairs out of the box, and sit down at three yards distance upon the top of the cabinet, which brought me almost to a level with his face. In this manner I had several conversations with him. I one day took the freedom to tell his majesty, that the contempt he discovered towards the rest of the world, did not seem answerable to those excellent qualities of mind that he was master of: That reason did not extend itself to the bulk of the body; on the contrary, we observed in our country, that the tallest persons were least provided with it: That among other animals, bees and ants had the reputation of more industry, art, and sagacity, than many of the larger sort; and that, as inconsiderable as he took me to be, I hoped I might live to do his majesty some service. The king heard me with attention, and began to conceive a much better opinion of me than he had ever before. He desired I would give him an account of the government of England as far as I possibly could; because, as fond as princes commonly are of their own customs (for so he conjectured of other monarchs by my former discourses), he would be glad to hear of any thing that might be for his imitation.

I imagine with thyself, courteous reader, how often I then wished for the tongue of Demosthenes or Cicero, that might have enabled me to celebrate the merits of my own dear native country in a style equal to its merits and felicity.

I began my discourse by informing his majesty, that our dominions consisted of two islands, which were composed of three mighty kingdoms under one sovereign,

reign, besides our plantations in America. I described long upon the fertility of our soil, and the temperature of our climate. I then spoke at large upon the constitution of an English parliament, partly made up of an illustrious body called the house of lords, of persons of the noblest blood, and of the most ancient and ample patrimonies. I described that extraordinary care always taken of their education in letters and arms, to qualify them for being counsellors to the king and kingdom; to have a share in the legislation; to be members of the highest court of judicature, from whence there could be no appeal; and to be champions always ready for the defence of their prince and country, by their valour, conduct, and fidelity. That these were the ornament and bulwark of the kingdom, worthy followers of their most renowned ancestors, whose honour had been the reward of their virtue, from which their posterity were never once known to degenerate. That these were joined several holy persons, as bishops, who in that assembly, under the title of bishops, whose peculiar business it is to take care of religion, and to instruct those who instruct the people therein. These were chosen and sought out through the whole nation by the prince and his wisest counsellors, among the nobles of the priesthood as were most deservedly distinguished by the sanctity of their lives and the purity of their erudition, who were indeed the spiritual fathers of the clergy and the people.

That the other part of the parliament consisted of an assembly called the house of commons, who were all principal gentlemen, *freely* picked and chosen out by the people themselves, for their great abilities and love of their country, to represent the kingdom of the whole nation. And that these two orders made up the most august assembly in Europe.

ca. I whom, in conjunction with the prince, the whole the temperature is committed.

arge upon when descended to the courts of justice, over partly with the judges, those venerable sages and inter- use of powers of the law, presided for determining the dis- most ancient rights and properties of men, as well as for that extrajudicial punishment of vice and protection of innocence. cation in relation to the prudent management of our trea- unsellors the valour and achievements of our forces by are in the land. I computed the number of our peo- ft court of by reckoning how many millions there might e no appeal each religious sect or political party among r the defence did not omit even our sports and pastimes, or valour, other particular, which I thought might redound the ornamental honour of my country. And I finished all y followed a brief historical account of affairs and events e honour of England for about an hundred years past.

in which this conversation was not ended under five audi- regenerate, each of several hours; and the king heard the ns, as part with great attention, frequently taking notes ps, whose that I spoke, as well as memorandums of what ligious, and which he intended to ask me.

These When I had put an end to these long discourses, whole majesty, in a sixth audience, consulting his notes, s, among which he asked many doubts, queries, and objections upon ervedly discussed the article. He asked what methods we used to and the debase the minds and bodies of our young nobi- he spiritual and in what kind of business they commonly the first and teachable part of their lives. ment confined the course was taken to supply that assembly ommons, in any noble family became extinct. What qua- icked and conditions were necessary in those who are to be their great and new lords: Whether the humour of the present the age, a sum of money to a court lady or a prime these two either, or a design of strengthening a party oppo- bly in Europe to the public interest, ever happened to be mo- in those advancements. What share of know-

ledge these lords had in the laws of their country and how they came by it, so as to enable them to decide the properties of their fellow-subjects in the last resort. Whether they were always so free from avarice, partialities, or want, that a bribe or any other sinister view could have no place among them. Whether those holy lords I spoke of, were always promoted to that rank upon account of their knowledge in religious matters and the sanctity of their lives; had never been compliers with the times when they were common priests, or slavish prostitute to the plains to some nobleman, whose opinions they continued servilely to follow after they were admitted into that assembly.

He then desired to know, what arts were practised in electing those whom I called commoners. Whether a stranger with a strong purse might influence the vulgar voters to choose him before their own landlord, or the most considerable gentleman in the neighbourhood. How it came to pass that people were so violently bent upon getting into that assembly, which I allowed to be a great trouble and expence, often to the ruin of their families, without any salary or pension: Because this appeared to me an exalted strain of virtue and public spirit, that his majesty seemed to doubt it might possibly not be always sincere: And he desired to know, whether so zealous gentlemen could have any views of refusing themselves for the charges and trouble they were at, by sacrificing the public good to the designs of a weak and vicious prince, in conjunction with a corrupted ministry. He multiplied his questions, and insisted me thoroughly upon every part of this history, proposing numberless inquiries and objections, which I think it not prudent or convenient to repeat.

Upon what I said in relation to our courts of justice, his majesty desired to be satisfied in several points.

And this I was the better able to do, having formerly almost ruined by a long suit in chancery, which was decreed for me with costs. He asked what time was usually spent in determining between right and wrong, and what degree of expence. Whether advocates and orators had liberty to plead causes manifestly known to be unjust, vexatious, and oppressive. Whether party in religion or politics was observed to be of any weight in the scale of justice. Whether those pleading orators were perpetually educated in the general knowledge of equity, or only in provincial, national, and other local customs. Whether they or their judges had any part in making those laws, which they assumed the liberty of interpreting and glossing upon at their pleasure. Whether they had ever at different times pleaded for and against the same cause, and cited precedents to prove contrary opinions. Whether they were a rich or poor corporation. Whether they received any pecuniary reward for pleading or delivering their opinions. And particularly, whether they were ever admitted as members in the lower houses, without.

I fell next upon the management of our treasury; and said, he thought my memory had failed, because I computed our taxes at about five or six millions a-year; and, when I came to mention the issues, he found they sometimes amounted to more than double: For the notes he had taken were particular in this point, because he hoped, as he told me, that the knowledge of our conduct might be useful to him, and he could not be deceived in his calculations. But if what I told him were true, he was still at a loss how a kingdom could run of its estate like a private person. He asked me, where were our creditors; and where we found money to pay them. He wondered to hear me talk of such

such chargeable and expensive wars; that certainly we must be a quarrellsome people, or live among very bad neighbours, and that our generals must needs be richer than our kings. He asked what business we had out of our own islands, unless upon the score of trade or treaty, or to defend the coast with our fleet. Above all, he was amazed to hear me talk of a mercenary standing army in the midst of peace and among a free people. He said, if we were governed by our own consent in the persons of our representatives, he could not imagine of whom we were afraid, or against whom we were to fight, and would hear my opinion, whether a private man's house might not better be defended by himself, his children, and family, than by half a dozen rascals picked up at a venture in the streets for small wages, who might get a hundred times more by cutting their throats.

He laughed at my odd kind of arithmetic (as he was pleased to call it), in reckoning the numbers of our people, by a computation drawn from the several sects among us in religion and politics. He said he knew no reason why those, who entertain notions prejudicial to the public, should be obliged to change, or should not be obliged to conceal their opinions. And as it was tyranny in any government to require the first, so it was weakness not to enforce the second: For a man may be allowed to keep poison in his closet, but not to vend them about for cures of distempers.

He observed, that among the diversions of nobility and gentry I had mentioned gaming; he desired to know at what age this entertainment was usually taken up, and when it was laid down: How much of their time it employed: Whether it ever went so high as to affect their fortunes: Whether it made mean vicious people, by their dexterity in that art, might

certain
e amo
als m
what
efs up
he coa
l to h
he mi
d, if
ersons
of who
to figh
ate ma
self, I
n rasc
ll wag
cuttur
ic (as
mbers
the few
He fa
tain o
bliged
al the
o requ
e the
o pois
for co
e of o
ing;
nent w
n: Ho
r it ev
Wheth
that an
migh

not arrive at great riches, and sometimes keep
very nobles in dependence, as well as habituate
to vile companions, wholly take them from
improvement of their minds, and force them,
the losses they received, to learn and practise that
dexterous dexterity upon others.

was perfectly astonished with the historical
I gave him of our affairs during the last cen-
protesting it was only a heap of conspiracies,
sions, murders, massacres, revolutions, banish-
s; the very worst effects that avarice, faction,
erify, perfidiousness, cruelty, rage, madness,
ed, envy, lust, malice, and ambition, could pro-
his majesty, in another audience, was at the pains
recapitulate the sum of all I had spoken; compa-
the questions he made with the answers I had
Then taking me into his hands, and stroak-
me gently, delivered himself in these words,
I shall never forget, nor the manner he spoke
in: My little friend Gildrig, you have made
most admirable panegyric upon your country; you
clearly proved, that ignorance, idleness, and
are the proper ingredients for qualifying a le-
gator; that laws are best explained, interpreted,
applied by those whose interest and abilities lie
inverting, confounding, and eluding them. I
saw among you some lines of an institution,
which in its original might have been tolerable, but
half erased, and the rest wholly blurred and
ruined by corruptions. It doth not appear from all
I have said, how any one perfection is required
toward the procurement of any one station among
us; much less that men are ennobled on account
of their virtue, that priests are advanced for their
learning, soldiers for their conduct or va-
lour, judges for their integrity, senators for the love
of

of their country, or counsellors for their wisdom. As for yourself, continued the king, who have spent the greatest part of your life in travelling, I am well disposed to hope you may hitherto have escaped many vices of your country. But by what I have gathered from your own relation, and the answers you have with much pains wringed and extorted from you, I cannot but conclude the bulk of your nation to be the most pernicious race of little odious vermin, that nature ever suffered to crawl upon the surface of the earth.

C H A P. VII.

The Author's love of his country. He makes a proposal of much advantage to the king, which is rejected. The king's great ignorance in politics. The learning of that country very imperfect and confined. The laws, and military affairs, and parties in the state.

NOTHING but an extreme love of truth could have hindered me from concealing this part of my story. It was in vain to discover my resentments, which were always turned into ridicule; and I was forced to rest with patience, while my noble and most beloved country was so injuriously treated. I am as heartily sorry as any of my readers can possibly be, that such an occasion was given: But the prince happened to be so curious and inquisitive upon every particular, that it could not consist either with gratitude or good manners to refuse giving him what satisfaction I was able. Yet this much may be allowed to say in my own vindication, that I artfully eluded many of his questions, and gave every point a more favourable turn by many degrees than

the strictness of truth would allow. For I have borne that laudable partiality to my own country, which Dionysius Halicarnassensis with so much justice recommends to an historian: I would not expose the frailties and deformities of my political monarchy, and place her virtues and beauties in the most advantageous light. This was my sincere endeavour; and those many discourses I had with that monarch, though it unfortunately failed of success.

But great allowances should be given to a king who lives wholly secluded from the rest of the world, and must therefore be altogether unacquainted with the manners and customs that most prevail in other nations: The want of which knowledge will ever produce many *prejudices*, and a certain *narrowness of thinking*, from which we and the politer countries of Europe are wholly exempted. And it would be hard indeed, if so remote a prince's notions of good and vice were to be offered as a standard for mankind.

To confirm what I have now said, and further to show the miserable effects of a *confined education*, I will here insert a passage which will hardly obtain credit. In hopes to ingratiate myself farther into his Majesty's favour, I told him of an invention, discovered between three and four hundred years ago, to mix a certain powder, into an heap of which the smallest spark of fire falling would kindle the whole in a moment, although it were as big as a mountain, and make it all fly up in the air together, with a noise and agitation greater than thunder. That a proper quantity of this powder rammed into an hollow tube of brass or iron, according to its bigness, would drive a ball of iron or lead with such violence and speed, as nothing was able to sustain its force. That the largest balls thus discharged would not only destroy whole ranks of an army at once, but batter

ter the strongest walls to the ground, sink down with a thousand men in each to the bottom of the sea; and when linked together by a chain, were cut through masts and rigging, divide hundred bodies in the middle, and lay all waste before them. That we often put this powder into large hollow balls of iron, and discharged them by an engine to some city we were besieging, which would rattle the pavements, tear the houses to pieces, burst and throw splinters on every side, dashing out the brains of all who came near. That I knew the ingredients very well, which were cheap and common; I understood the manner of compounding them, could direct his workmen how to make those tubes of a size proportionable to all other things in his majesty's kingdom, and the largest need not be above an hundred feet long; twenty or thirty of which tubes, charged with the proper quantity of powder and balls, would batter down the walls of the strongest town in his dominions in a few hours, or destroy the whole metropolis, if ever it should pretend to dispute his absolute commands. This I humbly offered to his majesty, as a small tribute of acknowledgment in return of so many marks that I had received of his royal favour and protection.

The king was struck with horror at the description I had given of those terrible engines and proposal I had made. He was amazed, how so potent and grovelling an insect as I (these were his expressions), could entertain such inhuman ideas and in so familiar a manner, as to appear wholly unmoved at all the scenes of blood and desolation which I had painted as the common effects of the destructive machines, whereof he said some evil genius, enemy to mankind, must have been the contriver. As for himself, he protested, that though few things delighted him so much as to

series in art or in nature, yet he would rather
 himself his kingdom, than to be privy to such a fe-
 which he commanded me, as I valued my life,
 to mention any more.

strange effect of *narrow principles* and *short*
 that a prince possessed of every quality which
 res veneration, love, and esteem; of strong
 great wisdom, and profound learning, endow-
 with admirable talents for government, and al-
 dored by his subjects; should, from a *nice un-*
very scruple, whereof in Europe we can have no
 option, let slip an opportunity put into his hand
 would have made him absolute master of the
 the liberties, and the fortunes of his people.
 er do I say this with the least intention to de-
 from the many virtues of that excellent king,
 the character I am sensible will on this account
 very much lessened in the opinion of an English
 er; but I take this defect among them to have
 from their ignorance, by not having hitherto
 ed politics into a science, as the more acute
 of Europe have done. For I remember very
 in a discourse one day with the king, when I
 ened to say there were several thousand books
 us written upon the *art of government*, it
 him (directly contrary to my intention) a very
 opinion of our understandings. He professed
 to abominate and despise all *mystery, refinement,*
intrigue, either in a prince or a minister. He
 not tell what I meant by *secrets of state*, where
 enemy, or some rival nation, were not in the case.
 confined the knowledge of governing within
 narrow bounds, to common sense and reason,
 justice and lenity, to the speedy determination of
 and criminal causes; with some other obvious
 as, which are not worth considering. And he
 it for his opinion, that whoever could make

ears of corn, or two blades of grass, to grow upon a spot of ground where only one grew before, would deserve better of mankind, and do more essential service to his country, than the whole race of peopledians put together.

The learning of this people is very defective, consisting only in morality, history, poetry, and mathematics, wherein they must be allowed to excel. The last of these is wholly applied to what may be useful in life, to the improvement of agriculture and all mechanical arts; so that among us it would be little esteemed. And as to ideas, entities, abstractions, and transcendentals, I could never draw the least conception into their heads.

No law of that country must exceed in words a number of letters in their alphabet, which consists only of two-and-twenty. But indeed few of the laws extend even to that length. They are expressed in the most plain and simple terms, wherein those people are not mercurial enough to discover above the obvious interpretation: And to write a comment upon a law is a capital crime. As to the decision of causes, or proceedings against criminals, their precedents are so few, that they have little reason to boast of any extraordinary skill in either.

They have had the art of printing as well as the Chinese time out of mind: But their libraries are not very large; for that of the king, which is reckoned the largest, doth not amount to above a thousand volumes, placed in a gallery of twelve hundred feet long, from whence I had liberty to borrow what books I pleased. The queen's joiner had contrived in one of Glumdalclitch's rooms a kind of wooden machine five-and-twenty feet high, formed like a standing ladder, the steps were each fifty feet long: It was indeed a moveable pair of stairs, the lowest end placed at ten feet distance from the wall

chamber. The book I had a mind to read
put up leaning against the wall; I first mount-
ed the upper step of the ladder, and turning my
back towards the book, began at the top of the page,
walking to the right and left about eight or
ten paces, according to the length of the lines, till
I was gotten a little below the level of mine eyes,
then descending gradually till I came to the bot-
tom, after which I mounted again, and began the
next page in the same manner, and so turned over
leaf, which I could easily do with both my hands,
as it was as thick and stiff as a paste-board, and in
the largest folios not above eighteen or twenty feet

their style is clear, masculine, and smooth, but
somewhat florid; for they avoid nothing more than multi-
tude of unnecessary words, or using various expres-
sions. I have perused many of their books, especi-
ally those in history and morality. Among the rest,
I was much diverted with a little old treatise, which
lay in Glumdalclitch's bed-chamber, and be-
longed to her governess, a grave elderly gentlewo-
man, who dealt in writings of morality and devo-
tion. The book treats of the weakness of human kind,
and is in little esteem except among the women and
the vulgar. However, I was curious to see what an
author of that country could say upon such a subject.
The writer went through all the usual topics of Eu-
ropean moralists, showing how diminutive, contemp-
tible, and helpless an animal was man in his own
nature; how unable to defend himself from incle-
mencies of the air, or the fury of wild beasts. How
much he was excelled by one creature in strength,
another in speed, by a third in foresight, by a
fourth in industry. He added, that nature was de-
clined in these latter declining ages of the world,
and could now produce only small abortive births,

in comparifon of thofe of ancient times. He faid, choſe was very reaſonable to think, not only that the ſpecies of men were originally much larger, but were often that there muſt have been giants in former ages, which, as it is aſſerted by hiſtory and tradition, is ſquarely confirmed by huge bones and ſkulls, ſometimes dug up in ſeveral parts of the kingdom, exceeding the common dwindled race of man in ſize many times. He argued, that the very laws of nature, moſt ſolutely required we ſhould have been made in the beginning of a ſize more large and robuſt, not ſo ſubject to deſtruction from every little accident of age, and falling from an houſe, or a ſtone caſt from the houſe of a boy, or being drowned in a little brook. From this way of reaſoning, the author drew ſeveral practical applications uſeful to the conduct of life, which need not be here to repeat. For my own part, I cannot avoid reflecting how univerſally this talent ſpread, of drawing lectures in morality, or indeed to a rather matter of diſcontent and repining, from the quarrels we raiſe with nature. And, I believe, upon a ſtrict enquiry, thoſe quarrels might be ſhewn as ill-grounded among us as they are among ſavage people.

As to their military affairs, they boaſt that the king's army conſiſts of an hundred and ſeventy thouſand foot and thirty-two thouſand horſe, that may be called an army, which is made up of the tradesmen in the ſeveral cities and farmers in the country, whoſe commanders are only the nobles and gentry, without pay or reward. They are indeed perfect enough in their exerciſes, and have very good diſcipline, wherein I ſaw no great method for how ſhould it be otherwiſe, where every man is under the command of his own landlord, and every citizen under that of the principal men in his

He family, chosen after the manner of Venice, by ballot, but we often seen the militia of Lorbrulgrud drawn to exercise in a great field near the city of twenty-five square. They were in all not above twenty-thousand foot and six thousand horse: But it was impossible for me to compute their number, considering the space of ground they took up. A man mounted on a large steed, might be about eight feet high. I have seen this whole body of men, not upon a word of command, draw their swords and brandish them in the air. Imagining the human figure nothing so grand, so surprising, and so finishing! it looked as if ten thousand flashes of lightning were darting at the same time from every part of the sky.

It was curious to know how this prince, to whose talents there is no access from any other country or inclination to think of armies, or to teach his people the practice of military discipline. But I was soon convinced, both by conversation and reading their histories: For in the course of many ages they have been troubled with the same disease to which the rest of mankind is subject; the nobility opposing the king for power, the people for liberty, the king for absolute dominion. All which, however, happily tempered by the laws of that kingdom, have been sometimes violated by each of the three parties, and have more than once occasioned civil wars, the last whereof was happily put an end to by this prince's grandfather in a general constitution; and the militia, then settled with common consent, hath been ever since kept in the strictest discipline.

C H A P. VIII.

The king and queen make a progress to the frontiers. The Author attends them. The manner in which he leaves the country very particularly related. He returns to England.

I HAD always a strong impulse that I should sometime recover my liberty, though it was impossible to conjecture by what means, or to form a project with the least hope of succeeding. The ship in which I sailed was the first ever known to be driven within sight of that coast, and the king had given strict orders, that if at any time another appeared, it should be taken ashore, and with all crew and passengers brought in a tumbril to Lbrulgrud. He was strongly bent to get me a man of my own size, by whom I might propagate the breed: But I think I should rather have died than undergone the disgrace of leaving a posterity to be kept in cages like tame Canary birds, and perhaps in time sold about the kingdom to persons of quality for curiosities. I was indeed treated with much kindness: I was the favourite of a great king and queen, and the delight of the whole court; but it was upon such a foot as ill became the dignity of human kind. I could never forget those domestic pledges I had left behind me. I wanted to be among people with whom I could converse upon equal terms, and walk about the streets and fields without being afraid of being trod to death like a frog or a young puppy. But my deliverance came sooner than I expected, and in a manner not very common: The whole story and circumstances of which I shall faithfully relate.

had now been two years in this country; and at the beginning of the third Glumdalclitch and her husband attended the king and queen in a progress to the coast of that kingdom. I was carried as usual in a travelling-box, which, as I have already described, was a very convenient closet of twelve feet long. And I had ordered a hammock to be fixed between two wooden ropes from the four corners at the top, to prevent the jolts when a servant carried me before him on horseback, as I sometimes desired, and would have been able to sleep in my hammock while we were upon the road. On the roof of my closet, not directly over the middle of the hammock, I ordered the joiner to cut out a hole of a foot square, to give me air in hot weather as I slept; which hole I shut at pleasure with another board, that drew backwards and forwards with all the smoothness of a groove.

When we came to our journey's end, the king gave me a night proper to pass a few days at a palace he had built near Flanflafnic, a city within eighteen English miles of the sea-side. Glumdalclitch and I were both extremely fatigued: I had gotten a small cold, but the king's daughter was so ill as to be confined to her chamber. I longed to see the ocean, which must be the great scene of my escape, if ever it should happen. I pretended to be worse than I really was, and desired leave to take the fresh air of the sea with a woman, whom I was very fond of, and who had sometimes been trusted with me. I shall never forget what unwillingness Glumdalclitch consented, under the strict charge she gave the page to be careful of me, bursting at the same time into a flood of tears, as if she had some foreboding of what was to happen. The boy took me out in my box about an hour's walk from the palace towards the sea-shore. I ordered him to set me down, and lifting up one of my sashes, cast many a wishful

wishful melancholy look towards the sea. I found myself not very well, and told the page that I had a mind to take a nap in my hammock, which I hoped would do me good. I got in, and the boy shut the window close down to keep out the cold. I fell asleep; and all I can conjecture is, that when I slept, the page, thinking no danger could happen, went among the rocks to look for birds eggs, having before observed him from my window leaning about, and picking up one or two in the clearest. Be that as it will, I found myself suddenly awaked with a violent pull upon the ring which was fastened at the top of my box for the conveniency of carrying. I felt my box raised very high in the air, and then borne forward with prodigious speed. The first jolt had like to have shaken me out of my hammock, but afterwards the motion was easy enough. I called out several times as loud as I could raise my voice; but all to no purpose. I looked towards my windows, and could see nothing but the clouds and sky. I heard a noise just over my head like the clapping of wings, and then began to perceive the woful condition I was in, that some eagle had caught the ring of my box in his beak, with an intention to let it fall upon a rock, like a tortoise in a shell, and then pick out my body and devour it: For the sagacity and smell of this bird enabled him to discover his quarry at a great distance, though better concealed than I could be within a two-inch board.

In a little time I observed the noise and flutter of wings to increase very fast, and my box was tossed up and down like a sign in a windy day. I heard several bangs or buffets, as I thought, given to the eagle (for such I am certain it must have been that held the ring of my box in his beak), and then all on a sudden felt myself falling perpendicularly down for above a minute, but with such incredible swiftness

I found that I almost lost my breath. My fall was stop-
ped by a terrible squash, that sounded louder to my
ears than the cataract of Niagara; after which I was
in the dark for another minute, and then my
eyes began to rise so high that I could see light from
the tops of the windows. I now perceived that I
had fallen into the sea. My box, by the weight of
eggs, and the goods that were in, and the broad
plate of iron fixed for strength at the four corners
the top and bottom, floated about five feet depth
ly away. I did then, and do now suppose, that
the vessel which flew away with my box was pursued
by one or three others, and forced to let me drop
the air, and defended himself against the rest, who ho-
oped to share in the prey. The plates of iron fasten-
ed to the bottom of the box (for those were the
strongest), preserved the balance while it fell, and
prevented it from being broken on the surface of the
sea. Every joint of it was well grooved; and the
plates did not move on hinges, but up and down like
a piston, which kept my closet so tight that very little
air came in. I got with much difficulty out of
the hammock, having first ventured to draw back
the slip-board on the roof already mentioned, con-
sidering on purpose to let in air, for want of which I
found myself almost stifled.

How often did I then wish myself with my dear
cousin, from whom one single hour had so far
separated me! And I may say with truth, that in the
view of my own misfortunes I could not forbear
lamenting my poor nurse, the grief she would suf-
fer for my loss, the displeasure of the queen, and
the ruin of her fortune. Perhaps many travellers
have not been under greater difficulties and distress
than I was at this juncture, expecting every mo-
ment to see my body dashed to pieces, or at least
swept by the first violent blast or rising wave. A
breach

breach in one single pane of glass would have brought immediate death; nor could any thing have prevented the windows but the strong lattice wires placed on the outside against accidents in travelling. I the water ooze in at several crannies, although leaks were not considerable, and I endeavoured stop them as well as I could. I was not able to up the roof of my closet, which otherwise I certainly should have done, and sat on the top of it, where I might at least preserve myself some hours longer than by being shut up (as I may call it) in the house. Or if I escaped these dangers for a day or two, what could I expect but a miserable death of cold and hunger? I was four hours under these circumstances expecting, and indeed wishing, every moment to my last.

I have already told the reader, that there were two strong staples fixed upon that side of my box which had no window, and into which the servant who used to carry me on horseback would put his leathern belt, and buckle it about his waist. Being in this disconsolate state, I heard, or at least thought I heard, some kind of grating noise on that side of my box where the staples were fixed; and soon after I began to fancy, that the box was pulled and towed along in the sea, for I now and then felt a sort of tugging, which made the waves rise near the tops of my windows, leaving me almost in the dark. This gave me some faint hopes of relief; although I was not able to imagine how it could be brought about. I ventured to unscrew one of my chairs which were always fastened to the floor; and having made a hard shift to screw it down again directly under the flipping-board that I had lately opened, I mounted on the chair, and putting my mouth as near as I could to the hole, I called for help in a loud voice, and in all the languages I understood.

I then fastened my handkerchief to a stick
carried, and thrusting it up the hole, wa-
several times in the air, that if any boat or
ere near, the seamen might conjecture some
my mortal to be shut up in the box.
and no effect from all I could do, but plainly
red my closet to be moved along; and in the
of an hour, or better, that side of the box
the staples were, and had no window, struck
something that was hard. I apprehended it
a rock, and found myself tossed more than
I plainly heard a noise upon the cover of my
like that of a cable, and the grating of it as
ed through the ring. I then found myself
ed up by degrees at least three feet higher than
before. Whereupon I again thrust up my
and handkerchief, calling for help till I was al-
hoarse. In return to which, I heard a great
repeated three times, giving me such trans-
of joy as are not to be conceived but by those
feel them. I now heard a trampling over my
and somebody calling through the hole with
voice in the English tongue, If there be any
below, let them speak. I answered, I was an
fishman, drawn by ill-fortune into the greatest
mity that ever any creature underwent, and beg-
by all that was moving to be delivered out of
dungeon I was in. The voice replied I was safe,
my box was fastened to their ship; and the car-
er should immediately come and saw a hole in
cover large enough to pull me out. I answered,
was needless, and would take up too much time,
there was no more to be done, but let one of
crew put his finger into the ring, and take the
out of the sea into the ship, and so into the cap-
tain's cabin. Some of them, upon hearing me talk
wildly, thought I was mad; others laughed; for
indeed

indeed it never came into my head that I was
got among people of my own stature and strength.
The carpenter came, and in a few minutes saw
passage about four feet square, then let down a
ladder, upon which I mounted, and from thence
was taken into the ship in a very weak condition.

The sailors were all in amazement, and asked
a thousand questions, which I had no inclination
answer. I was equally confounded at the sight
so many pigmies, for such I took them to be,
having so long accustomed mine eyes to the
strous objects I had left. But the captain, Mr
mas Wilcocks, an honest worthy Shropshire
observing I was ready to faint, took me into
cabin, gave me a cordial to comfort me, and
me *turn in* upon his own bed, advising me to
a little rest, of which I had great need. Before
went to sleep, I gave him to understand that I
some valuable furniture in my box too good to
lost; a fine hammock, an handsome field-bed,
chairs, a table, and a cabinet: That my closet
hung on all sides, or rather quilted, with silk
cotton: That if he would let one of the crew
my closet into his cabin, I would open it there
fore him, and show him my goods. The captain
hearing me utter these absurdities, concluded I
raving: However (I suppose to pacify me), he
promised to give order as I desired; and going
deck, sent some of his men down into my closet
from whence (as I afterwards found) they drew
all my goods, and stripped off the quilting: But
chairs, cabinet, and bedstead, being screwed to
floor, were much damaged by the ignorance of
seamen, who tore them up by force. Then they
knocked off some of the boards for the use of
ship; and when they had got all they had a
for, let the hull drop into the sea; which, by

I was by breaches made in the bottom and sides, sunk and strent. And indeed I was glad not to have been tes sawator of the havoc they made; because I am own a fient it would have sensibly touched me, by from the former passages into my mind, which I had condifion forget.

nd asked apt some hours, but perpetually disturbed with elinations of the place I had left, and the dangers I the fight escaped. However, upon waking, I found my- to be, much recovered. It was now about eight o' clock to the night, and the captain ordered supper immediate- n, Mr Thinking I had already fasted too long. He en- phire nined me with great kindness, observing me not ne into k wildly, or talk inconsistently; and, when we , and ne left alone, desired I would give him a relation me to my travels, and by what accident I came to be fet . Before in that monstrous wooden chest. He said, l that I about twelve o' clock at noon, as he was look- good through his glass, he spied it at a distance, and ld-bed, ight it was a sail, which he had a mind to make, y closet ng not much out of his course, in hopes of buying ith silk biscuit, his own beginning to fall short; that crew be coming nearer, and finding his error, he sent it there his long-boat to discover what I was: That The capmen came back in a fright, swearing that they kided I seen a swimming house; that he laughed at ne), he pte folly; and went himself in the boat, ordering going up men to take a strong cable along with them; o my clo the weather being calm, he rowed round me ey drew al times, observing my windows, and the wire- ng: But ces that defended them: that he discovered two ewed to es upon one side, which was all of boards, with- ance of any passage for light. He then commanded his Then to row up to that side, and fastening a cable to e use of of the staples, ordered them to tow my chest (as had a mny called it) towards the ship. When it was there, h, by real gave directions to fasten another cable to the ring

P

fixed

fixed in the cover, and to raise up my chest pullies, which all the sailors were not able to above two or three feet. He said, they saw me an handkerchief thrust out of the hole, and concluded that some unhappy man must be shut up in cavity. I asked whether he or the crew had any prodigious birds in the air about the time first discovered me? To which he answered, discoursing this matter with the sailors while I asleep, one of them said, he had observed three ea flying towards the north; but remarked nothing their being larger than the usual size, which I suppose must be imputed to the great height they w at; and he could not guess the reason of my quest. I then asked the captain, how far he reckoned might be from land? He said, by the best com tation he could make, we were at least an hund leagues. I assured him he must be mistaken by alm half, for I had not left the country from whence came above two hours before I dropt into the. Whereupon he began again to think that my br was disturbed, of which he gave me a hint, and vised me to go to bed in a cabbin he had provid I assured him I was well refreshed with his good tertainment and company, and as much in my sen as ever I was in my life. He then grew serious, and desired me to speak freely, whether I were not troubled in mind by the consciousness of some enormous crime, for which I was punished at the command of some prince, by exposing me in that chest, as great criminals in other countries have been forced to in a leaky vessel without provisions: For although he should be sorry to have taken so ill a man in his ship, yet he would engage his word to set me safe ashore in the first port where we arrived. I added, that his suspicions were much increased by some very absurd speeches I had delivered at first

chest, and afterwards to himself, in relation to
able to quiet or chest, as well as by my odd looks and
saw me hour while I was at supper.
and com- begged his patience to hear me tell my story,
ut up in I faithfully did from the last time I left Eng-
w had to the moment he first discovered me. And as
he time always forceth its way into rational minds, so this
wered, worthy gentleman, who had some tincture of
while I ng, and very good sense, was immediately con-
three ea of my candour and veracity. But, farther to
nothing m all I had said, I entreated him to give order
which I my cabinet should be brought, of which I had
t they w ey in my pocket, (for he had already informed
ny quest w the seamen disposed of my closet). I open-
eckoned in his own presence, and showed him the small
est com- tion of rarities I made in the country from
n hund ce I had been so strangely delivered. There was
n by alm comb I had contrived out of the stumps of the
n when s beard, and another of the same materials,
into the fixed into a paring of her Majesty's thumb-nail,
at my br served for the back. There was a collection
nt, and needles and pins, from a foot to half a yard long,
I provid wasp-stings, like joiners tacks; some combings
is good e Queen's hair; a gold ring, which one day she
n my fee me a present of in a most obliging manner;
erious, ng it from her little finger, and throwing it over
e not tr head like a collar. I desired the captain would
e enorm- de to accept this ring in return of his civilities;
ommand ch he absolutely refused. I showed him a corn
st, as gr I had cut off with my own hand from a maid of
rced to our's toe; it was about the bigness of a Kentish
r althou in, and grown so hard, that, when I returned
man in England, I got it hollowed into a cup, and set in
to set t. Lastly, I desired him to see the breeches I
ived. then on, which were made of a mouse's skin.
creased could force nothing on him but a footman's
at first sh, which I observed him to examine with great

curiosity, and found he had a fancy for it. He received it with abundance of thanks, more than a trifle could deserve. It was drawn by an unskilful surgeon, in a mistake, from one of Glumdalclitch's men, who was afflicted with the toothache; but it was as sound as any in his head. I got it clean and put into my cabinet. It was about a foot and four inches in diameter.

The captain was very well satisfied with this relation I had given him; and said, he hoped, when we returned to England, I would oblige the world by putting it on paper, and making it public. My answer was, that I thought we were already stocked with books of travels: That nothing new now pass which was not extraordinary; when I doubted some authors less consulted truth than their own vanity or interest, or the diversion of ignorant readers: That my story could contain little but common events, without those ornamental decorations of strange plants, trees, birds, and other animals; or of the barbarous customs and idolatry of savage people, with which most writers abound. However, I thanked him for his good opinion, and promised to take the matter into my thoughts.

He said, he wondered at one thing very much, which was, to hear me speak so loud, asking whether the King or Queen of that country were thick of hearing? I told him, it was what I had used to for above two years past; and that I was used as much at the voices of him and his men, as they seemed to me only to whisper, and yet I could hear them well enough. But, when I spoke in that country, it was like a man talking in the street to another looking out from the top of a steeple, unless when I was placed on a table, or held in any person's hand. I told him, I had likewise observed another thing, that when I first got into the ship, and the sails

it. He told me, I thought they were the most contemptible creatures I had ever beheld. For while I was in that prince's country, I could endure to look in a glass, after mine eyes had been accustomed to such prodigious objects, because comparison gave me so despicable a conceit of myself. The captain said, that while we were at the court, he observed me to look at every thing with a mixture of wonder, and that I often seemed hardly able to contain my laughter, which he knew not well to take, but imputed it to some disorder in my head. I answered, it was very true; and I wonder I could forbear, when I saw his dishes of silver three-pence, a leg of pork hardly as useful, a cup not so big as a nut-shell; and so I went on, describing the rest of his household-stuff in the same manner. For although I had been ordered a little equipage of all things necessary for me, while I was in her service, yet my mind was wholly taken up with what I saw on every side, and I winked at my own littleness, as men do at their own faults. The captain understood my raillery very well, and merrily replied to the old English proverb, that he doubted mine eyes were bigger than my belly, for he did not observe my stomach so good, although I had fasted all the while. And, continuing his mirth, protested he would have given an hundred pounds to have seen my countryman in the eagle's bill, and afterwards in its fall to great a height into the sea; which would have been a most astonishing object, worthy the description of it transmitted to future ages. And the comparison of Phaeton was so obvious, that he could not forbear applying it, although he did not much admire the conceit. The captain, having been at Tonquin, was in his return to England driven north-eastward to the latitude

tude of 44 degrees, and of longitude 143. upon meeting a trade-wind two days after I came were board him, we sailed southward a long time, a great distance, coasting New-Holland, kept our course west, for west, and then south-south-west, till we doubled the Cape of Good Hope. Our voyage was very prosperous; but I shall not trouble the reader with a detail of it. The captain called in at one or two ports, and sent in his long boat for provisions and water; but I never went out of the ship till it came into the Downs, which was on the third of June 1706, about nine months after my escape. I offered to leave my goods in security for payment of my freight; but the captain protested he would not receive one farthing. We took a kind leave of each other, and I made him promise he would come to see me at my house in Redriff. I hired a horse and guide for five shillings, which I borrowed of the captain.

As I was on the road, observing the littleness of the houses, the trees, the cattle, and the people, I began to think myself in Lilliput. I was afraid of trampling on every traveller I met, and often called aloud to have them stand out of the way, so that I had like to have gotten one or two broken heads from my impertinence.

When I came to my own house, for which I was forced to enquire, one of the servants opening the door, I bent down to go in (like a goose under a gate) for fear of striking my head. My wife came out to embrace me; but I stooped lower than her knees, thinking she could otherwise never be able to reach my mouth. My daughter kneeled to ask a blessing, but I could not see her till she arose, having been so long used to stand with my head and eyes erect to above sixty feet; and then I went and took her up with one hand by the waist. I looked

upon the servants, and one or two friends
were in the house, as if they had been pigmies
a giant. I told my wife she had been too
for I found she had starved herself and
laughter to nothing. In short, I behaved my-
unaccountably, that they were all of the cap-
opinion when he first saw me, and concluded
lost my wits. This I mention as an instance
great power of habit and prejudice.
a little time, I and my family and friends
to a right understanding; but my wife pro-
I should never go to sea any more; although
will destiny so ordered, that she had not power
under me, as the reader may know hereafter.
mean time, I here conclude the second part
unfortunate voyages.

PART

T R A V E L S.

P A R T III.

A VOYAGE TO LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGGNAG, GLUBBDUBDRIB, AND JAPAN.

C H A P. I.

The author sets out on his third voyage, is taken by pirates. The malice of a Dutchman. His arrival at an island. He is received into Laputa.

I HAD not been at home above ten days, when Captain William Robinson, a Cornishman, commander of the Hope-well, a stout ship of three hundred tons, came to my house. I had formerly been surgeon of another ship, where he was master and a fourth part owner, in a voyage to the Levant; he had always treated me more like a brother than an inferior officer, and, hearing of my arrival, made me a visit, as I apprehended, only out of friendship, for nothing passed more than what is usual after long absences. But repeating his visits often, expressing his joy to find me in good health, asking

Whether I were now settled for life, adding that he intended a voyage to the East-Indies in two months; at last he plainly invited me, though with some apologies, to be surgeon of the ship; that I should have another surgeon under me, besides our two apprentices; that my salary should be double to the usual salary; and that having experienced my knowledge in sea-affairs to be at least equal to his, he would enter into any engagement to follow my advice, as much as if I had shared in the command.

He said so many other obliging things, and I knew him to be so honest a man, that I could not reject his proposal; the thirst I had of seeing the world, notwithstanding my past misfortunes, continuing as violent as ever. The only difficulty that remained, was to persuade my wife, whose consent however I at last obtained, by the prospect of advantage she proposed to her children.

We set out the 5th day of August 1706, and arrived at Fort St George the 11th of April 1707. We staid there three weeks to refresh our crew, many of whom were sick. From thence we went to Tonquin, where the captain resolved to continue some time, because many of the goods he intended to buy were not ready, nor could he expect to be dispatched in several months. Therefore, in hopes to defray some of the charges he must be at, he bought a sloop, loaded it with several sorts of goods, wherewith the Tonquinese usually trade to the neighbouring islands, and putting fourteen men on board, whereof three were of the country, he appointed me master of the sloop, and gave me power to traffic, while he transacted his affairs at Tonquin.

We had not sailed above three days, when, a great storm arising, we were driven five days to the north-north-east, and then to the east; after which we had fair weather, but still with a pretty strong gale

gale from the west. Upon the tenth day we were chased by two pirates, who soon overtook us; my sloop was so deep laden, that she sailed very slowly; neither were we in a condition to defend ourselves.

We were boarded about the same time by both the pirates, who entered furiously at the head of their men; but finding us all prostrate upon our faces (for so I gave order), they pinioned us with strong ropes, and, setting a guard upon us, went to search the sloop.

I observed among them a Dutchman, who seemed to be of some authority, though he was not commander of either ship. He knew us by our countenances to be Englishmen; and jabbering to us in his own language, swore we should be tied back to back, and thrown into the sea. I spoke Dutch tolerably well; I told him who we were, and begged of him, in consideration of our being Christians and Protestants, of neighbouring countries in strict alliance, that he would move the captains to take some pity on us. This inflamed his rage; he repeated his threatenings; and turning to his companions, spoke with great vehemence in the Japanese language, as I suppose, often using the word Christians.

The largest of the two pirate ships was commanded by a Japanese captain, who spoke a little Dutch but very imperfectly. He came up to me, and asked several questions, which I answered in great familiarity, he said we should not die. I made the captain a very low bow; and then turning to the Dutchman, said, I was sorry to find more mercy in a heathen than in a brother Christian. But I had soon reason to repent those foolish words: For the malicious reprobate, having often endeavoured in vain to persuade both the captains that I might be thrown into the sea (which they would not yield to) after the promise made me that I should not die

never prevailed so far as to have a punishment inflicted on me, worse, in all human appearance, than death itself. My men were sent by an equal division into both the pirate ships, and my sloop was manned. As to myself, it was determined I should be set adrift in a small canoe, with oars and a sail, and four days provisions; which the Japanese captain was so kind to double out of his own stores, and would permit no man to touch me. I got down into the canoe, while the Japanese, standing upon the deck, loaded me with the curses and injurious terms his language could command.

About an hour before we saw the pirates, I had made an observation, and found we were in the latitude of 46 N. and of longitude 183. When I was at some distance from the pirates, I discovered by my pocket-glass several islands to the south-east. I set up my sail, the wind being fair, with a design to reach the nearest of those islands, which I made it to do in about three hours. It was all rocky, never I got many birds eggs; and striking fire, I gathered some heath and dry sea-weed, by which I warmed my eggs. I eat no other supper, being reduced to spare my provisions as much as I could. I passed the night under the shelter of a rock, strewn with some heath under me, and slept pretty well.

The next day I sailed to another island, and thence to a third and fourth, sometimes using my sail, and sometimes my paddles. But, not to trouble the reader with a particular account of my distresses, let me suffice, that on the fifth day I arrived at the last island in my sight, which lay south-south-east to the former.

This island was at a greater distance than I expected, and I did not reach it in less than five hours. I compassed it almost round before I could find a convenient

convenient place to land in, which was a small cove about three times the wideness of my canoe. I found the island to be all rocky, only a little intermingled with tufts of grass and sweet smelling herbs. I took out my small provisions, and after having refreshed myself, I secured the remainder in a cave, whereof there were great numbers. I gathered plenty of eggs upon the rocks, and got a quantity of dry sea-weed and parched grass, which I designed to kindle the next day, and roast my eggs as well as I could (for I had about me my flint, steel, marble, and burning-glass.) I lay all night in the cave where I had lodged my provisions. My bed was the dry grass and sea-weed which I intended for fuel. I slept very little; for the disquiets of my mind prevailed over my weariness, and kept me awake. I considered how impossible it was to preserve myself in so desolate a place, and how miserable my condition must be; yet found myself so listless and desponding, that I had not the heart to rise; and before I could get spirits enough to creep out of my cave, the day was far advanced. I walked a while among the rocks, the sky was perfectly clear, and the sun so hot, that I was forced to turn my face from it. When all on a sudden it became obscure, as if by thought, in a manner very different from what happens by the interposition of a cloud. I turned back and perceived a vast opaque body between me and the sun, moving forwards towards the island: it seemed to be about two miles high, and hid the sun for six or seven minutes, but I did not observe the air to be much colder, or the sky more darkened, than if I had stood under the shade of a mountain. As it approached nearer over the place where I was, it appeared to be a firm substance, the bottom smooth, and shining very bright from the reflection of the sea below. I stood upon a height about a hundred

red yards from the shore, and saw this vast body
ending almost to a parallel with me, at less than
English mile distance. I took out my pocket-
compass, and could plainly discover numbers of
islands moving up and down the sides of it, which
seemed to be sloping, but what those people were
I was not able to distinguish.
The natural love of life gave me some inward
sensation of joy; and I was ready to entertain an
opinion that this adventure might some way or other
deliver me from the desolate place and con-
dition I was in. But at the same time, the reader
can hardly conceive my astonishment, to behold an
island in the air, inhabited by men, who were able
(it should seem) to raise, or sink, or put into a
translative motion, as they pleased. But not be-
cause at that time, in a disposition to philosophise
on this phænomenon, I rather chose to observe
the course the island would take, because it seem-
ed a while to stand still. Yet soon after, it ad-
vanced nearer; and I could see the sides of it en-
compassed with several gradations of galleries and
walks, at certain intervals, to descend from one to
another. In the lowest gallery I beheld some
people fishing with long angling rods, and others
walking on. I waved my cap (for my hat was long
worn out) and my handkerchief towards the
island; and, upon its nearer approach, I called and
shouted with the utmost strength of my voice; and
looking circumspectly, I beheld a croud ga-
thered to that side which was most in my view.
They, by their pointing towards me and to each
other, that they plainly discovered me, although
I made no return to my shouting: but I could
see four or five men running in great haste up the
side to the top of the island, who then disappear-
ed. I happened rightly to conjecture that these

Q

were

were sent for orders to some person in authority upon this occasion.

The number of people increased ; and in less than half an hour the island was moved and raised in such a manner, that the lowest gallery appeared in a parallel of less than a hundred yards distant from the height where I stood. I then put myself into the most supplicating postures, and spoke in the humblest accent, but received no answer. Those who stood nearest over-against me, seemed to be persons of distinction, as I supposed by their habit. They conferred earnestly with each other, looking often upon me. At length one of them called out in a clear, polite, smooth dialect, not unlike what I found to the Italian ; and therefore I returned an answer in that language, hoping at least that the cadence might be more agreeable to his ears. As though neither of us understood the other, yet a meaning was easily known, for the people saw to what distress I was in,

They made signs for me to come down from the rock, and go towards the shore, which I accordingly did ; and the flying island being raised to a convenient height, the verge directly over me ; a chair was let down from the lowest gallery, with a seat fastened to the bottom, to which I fixed myself, and was drawn up by pulleys.

CHA

C H A P. II.

Humours and dispositions of the Laputans described. An account of their learning. Of the king and his court. The author's reception there. The inhabitants subject to fears and inquietudes. An account of the women.

On my alighting I was surrounded by a croud of people, but those who stood nearest seemed to be of better quality. They beheld me with the marks and circumstances of wonder; neither was I much in their debt; having never before then seen a race of mortals so singular in their manners, habits, and countenances. Their heads were all reclined either to the right or the left; and their eyes turned inward, and the other directed up to the zenith. Their outward garments were adorned with the figures of suns, moons, and stars, interwoven with those of fiddles, flutes, harps, lutes, guittars, harpsicords, and many other instruments of music, unknown to us in Europe. I observed here and there many in the habit of servants, with a blown bladder fastened like a flail to the end of a short stick, which they carried in their hands. In each bladder was a small quantity of dried pease, or little pebbles, (as I was afterwards informed.) With these bladders they now and then slapped the mouths and ears of those who stood near them, of which practice I could not then conceive the meaning. It seems the minds of those people are so taken up with intense speculations, that they neither can speak nor attend to the discourses of others, without being roused by some

external taction upon the organs of speech and hearing ; for which reason, those persons who are able to afford it always keep a flapper, (the original is climenole) in their family, as one of their domestics ; nor ever walk abroad, or make visits without him. And the business of this officer is, when two or more persons are in company, gently to strike with his bladder in the mouth of him who is to speak, and the right ear of him or them to whom the speaker addresseth himself. This flapper is likewise employed diligently to attend his master in his walks, and upon occasion to give him a soft flap on his eyes ; because he is always so wrapped up in cogitation, that he is in manifest danger of falling down every precipice, and bounding his head against every post ; and in the streets, of jostling others, or being jostled into the kennel.

It was necessary to give the reader this information, without which he would be at the same loss with me to understand the proceedings of those people, as they conducted me up the stairs to the top of the island, and from thence to the royal palace. While we were ascending, they forgot several times what they were about, and left me to myself until their memories were again roused by their flappers ; for they appeared altogether unmoved by the sight of my foreign habit and countenance, and by the shouts of the vulgar, whose thoughts and minds were more disengaged.

At last we entered the palace, and proceeded into the chamber of presence ; where I saw the king seated on his throne, attended on each side by persons of prime quality. Before the throne was a large table filled with globes, and spheres, and mathematical instruments of all kinds. His majesty took not the least notice of us, although our entrance were not without sufficient noise, by the

concourse

encourse of all persons belonging to the court. But he was then deep in a problem, and we attended at least an hour before he could solve it. There stood by him, on each side, a young page, with flaps in their hands; and when they saw he was at leisure, one of them gently struck his mouth, and the other his right ear; at which he started, and one awaked on the sudden, and looking towards me, and the company I was in, recollected the occasion of our coming, whereof he had been informed before. He spoke some words, whereupon immediately a young man with a flap came up to my side, and flapt me gently on the right ear; but I made signs as well as I could, that I had no occasion for such an instrument; which, as afterwards found, gave his majesty and the whole court a very mean opinion of my understanding. The king, as far as I could conjecture, asked me several questions, and I addressed myself to him in the languages I had. When it was found that I could neither understand nor be understood, I was conducted by his order to an apartment in his palace, (this prince being distinguished above all his predecessors for his hospitality to strangers) where two servants were appointed to attend me. My dinner was brought, and four persons of quality, whom I remembered to have seen very near the king's person, did me the honour to dine with me. We had two courses, of three dishes each. In the first course, there was a shoulder of mutton, cut into an equilateral triangle; a piece of beef into a rhomboides; and a pudding into a cycloid. The second course was two ducks trussed up into the form of fiddles; sausages and puddings resembling pipes and hautboys, and a breast of veal in the shape of a harp. The servants cut our bread into

cones, cylinders, parallelograms, and several other mathematical figures.

While we were at dinner, I made bold to ask the names of several things in their language; and those noble persons, by the assistance of their flappers, delighted to give me answers, hoping to raise my admiration of their great abilities, if I could be brought to converse with them. I was soon able to call for bread and drink, or whatever else I wanted.

After dinner my company withdrew, and a person was sent to me by the king's order, attended by a flapper. He brought with him penk, ink, and paper, and three or four books; giving me to understand by signs, that he was sent to teach me the language. We sat together four hours, in which time I wrote down a great number of words in columns, with the translations over-against them. I likewise made a shift to learn several short sentences. For my tutor would order one of my servants to fetch something, to turn about, to make bow, to sit, or stand, or walk, and the like. Then I took down the sentence in writing. He shewed me also in one of his books, the figures of the sun, moon, and stars, the zodiac, the tropics, and polar circles, together with the denominations of many figures of planes and solids. He gave me the names and descriptions of all the musical instruments, and the general terms of art in playing on each of them. After he had left me, I placed all the words, with their interpretations, in alphabetical order. And thus in a few days, by the help of a very faithful memory, I got some insight into their language.

The word which I interpret the flying or floating island, is in the original Laputa; whereof I could never learn the true etymology. Lap, in the

ate language, signifieth *high*, and Untah a *go-*
; from which they say by corruption was
ed Laputa, from Lapuntah. But I do not
ove of this derivation, which seems to be a
strained. I ventured to offer to the learned
them a conjecture of my own, that Laputa
quasi Lap outed; Lap signifying properly the
ing of the sun beams in the sea; and Outed a
which however I shall not obtrude, but
it to the judicious reader.

Those to whom the king had entrusted me ob-
ing how ill I was clad, ordered a tailor to come
morning, and take my measure for a suit of
ches. This operator did his office after a dif-
nt manner from those of his trade in Europe.
first took my altitude by a quadrant, and then
rule and compasses described the dimensions
outlines of my whole body; all which he en-
ed upon paper, and in six days brought my
ches, very ill made, and quite out of shape, by
opening to mistake a figure in the calculation;
my comfort was, that I observed such accidents
frequent, and little regarded.

During my confinement for want of cloathes,
by an indisposition that held me some days
ger, I much enlarged my dictionary; and when
ent next to court, was able to understand many
gs the king spoke, and to return him some kind
answers. His majesty had given orders, that
island should move North East and by East, to
vertical point over Lagoda, the metropolis of
whole kingdom, below upon the firm earth.
was about ninety leagues distant, and our voy-
lasted four days and an half. I was not in the
sensible of the progressive motion made in the
by the island. On the second morning, about
even o'clock, the king himself in person, attend-
ed

ed by his nobility, courtiers, and officers, have prepared all their musical instruments, played them for three hours without intermission; so I was quite stunned with the noise; neither could I possibly guess the meaning until my tutor informed me. He said, that the people of their island had their ears adapted to hear the music of the spheres, which always played at certain periods: and their court was now prepared to bear their part in whatever instrument they most excelled.

In our journey towards Lagoda, the capital of the island, his majesty ordered that the island should stop at certain towns and villages, from whence he might receive the petitions of his subjects. And to this purpose, several packthreads were let down with small weights at the bottom. On these packthreads the people strung their petitions, which mounted up directly, like the scraps of paper fastened to the tail of a school-boy's kite at the end of the string that holds their kite. Sometimes we received wine and victuals from below, which were drawn up by pulleys.

The knowledge I had in mathematics gave me great assistance in acquiring their phraseology, which depended much upon that science, and music; and in the latter I was not unskilled. Their ideas were perpetually conversant in lines and figures. If they would, for example, praise the beauty of a woman, or any other animal, they described it by rhombs, circles, parallelograms, ellipses, and other geometrical terms; or else by words drawn from music, needless here to repeat. I observed in the king's kitchen all sorts of mathematical and musical instruments, after the figure of which they cut up the joints that were served to his majesty's table.

Their houses are very ill built, the walls being without one right angle in any apartment; and the

arise from the contempt they bear for
al geometry, which they despise as vulgar
mechanic, those instructions they give being
designed for the intellectuals of their workmen,
on occasions many mistakes. And although
they are dexterous enough upon a piece of paper
in the management of the rule, the pencil, and
compass, yet in the common actions and beha-
viour of life, I have not seen a more clumsy, auk-
ward and unhandy people, nor so slow and per-
plexed in their conceptions upon all other sub-
jects except those of mathematics and music.
They are very bad reasoners, and vehemently
opposed to opposition, unless when they happen to
be in the right opinion, which is seldom their
case. In Imagination, fancy, and invention, they
are wholly strangers to, nor have any words in
their language by which those ideas can be ex-
pressed; the whole compass of their thoughts and
conceptions being shut up within the two forementioned

arts. Most of them, and especially those who deal in
the astronomical part, have great faith in judicial
astronomy, although they are ashamed to own it
as such. But what I chiefly admired, and thought
rather unaccountable, was the strong disposi-
tion observed in them towards news and politics;
they continually inquiring into public affairs, giving
judgments in matters of state, and passionately
contending every inch of a party-opinion. I have
observed the same disposition among most
of the mathematicians I have known in Europe;
though I could never discover the least analogy
between the two sciences; unless those people sup-
pose that because the smallest circle hath as many
parts as the largest, therefore the regulation and
government of the world require no more abilities
than

than the handling and turning of a globe. But rather take this quality to spring from a very common infirmity of human nature, inclining us to be more curious and conceited in matters where we have least concern, and for which we are the least adapted, either by study or nature.

These people are under continual disquietude, never enjoying a minute's peace of mind; and their disturbances proceed from causes which very little affect the rest of mortals. Their apprehensions arise from several changes they dread in the celestial bodies. For instance, that the earth, by the continual approaches of the sun towards it, must in the course of time be absorbed or swallowed up. That the face of the sun will be by degrees encroached upon with its own effluvia, and give no more light to the world. That the earth very narrowly escaped a brush from the tail of the last comet, which would have infallibly reduced it to ashes; and that the next, which they have calculated for one hundred and thirty years hence, will probably destroy us. That if in his perihelion it should approach within a certain degree of the sun, (as by their calculations they have reason to dread) it will conceive a degree of heat ten thousand times more intense than of red-hot glowing iron; and in its approach from the sun, carry a blazing tail ten hundred thousand and fourteen miles long; through which if the earth should pass at the distance of one hundred thousand miles from the Neucleus, or body of the comet, it must on its passage be consumed by fire, and reduced to ashes. That the sun, by spending its rays without any nutriment to support them, will at last be wholly consumed and annihilated; which must be attended with the destruction of this earth, and of all the planets which receive their light from it.

They are so perpetually alarmed with the apprehensions of these and the like impending dangers, that they can neither sleep quietly in their beds, nor have any relish for the common pleasures or amusements of life. When they meet an acquaintance in the morning, the first question is about the health, how he looked at his setting and rising, and what hopes they have to avoid the stroke of the approaching comet. This conversation they are apt to run into with the same temper that we discover in delighting to hear terrible stories of spirits and hobgoblins; which they greedily listen to, and dare not go to bed for fear of.

The women of the island have abundance of virtue; they condemn their husbands, and are extremely fond of strangers; whereof there is always a considerable number from the continent below, coming at court, either upon affairs of the state, or to towns and corporations, or their own particular occasions, but are much despised, because they want the same endowments. Among these ladies chuse their gallants: But the vexation is, that they act with too much ease and security; the husband is always so wrapt in speculation, that the mistress and lover may proceed to the closest familiarities before his face, if he be but supplied with paper and implements, and without the least suspicion at his side.

The wives and daughters lament their confinement to the island, although I think it the most delicious spot of ground in the world: And although they live here in the greatest plenty and abundance, and are allowed to do whatever they please, they long to see the world, and take the notions of the metropolis, which they are not allowed to do without a particular licence from the government; and this is not easy to be obtained, because

cause the people of quality have found by frequent experience, how hard it is to persuade their men to return from below. I was told, that a great court lady, who had several children, married to the prime minister, the richest sub in the kingdom, a very graceful person, extremely fond of her, and lives in the finest palace of the island, went down to Lagado on the pretence of bad health; there hid herself for several months, till the king sent a warrant to search for her, and she was found in an obscure eating-house all in rags, having pawned her clothes to maintain an old deformed footman, who beat her every day, and whose company she was taken much against her will. And although her husband received her with all possible kindness, and without the least reproach, she soon after contrived to steal down again with all her jewels to the same gallant, and hath since been heard of since.

This may perhaps pass with the reader rather for an European or English story, than for one of a country so remote; but he may please to consider, that the caprices of women-kind are not limited by any climate or nation, and that they are much more uniform than can be easily imagined.

In about a month's time I had made a tolerable proficiency in their language, and was able to answer most of the king's questions, when I had the honour to attend him. His majesty discovered the least curiosity to inquire into the laws, government, history, religion, or manners of the countries where I had been, but confined his questions to the state of mathematics, and received the account I gave him with great contempt and indifference, though often roused by his flapper on one side.

C H A

C H A P. III.

Phenomenon solved by modern philosophy and astronomy. The Laputians great improvements in the arts. The king's method of suppressing insurrections.

desired leave of this prince to see the curiosities of the island, which he was graciously pleased to grant, and ordered my tutor to attend me. I wanted to know to what cause in art or in nature it owed its several motions, whereof I will give a philosophical account to the reader. The flying or floating island is exactly circular, the diameter 7837 yards, or about four miles and half, and consequently contains ten thousand acres. It is three hundred yards thick. The bottom or under surface, which appears to those who see it from below, is one even regular plate of adamant, shooting up to the height of about three hundred yards. Above it lie the several mountains in their usual order, and over all is a coat of earth mould, ten or twelve feet deep. The depression of the upper surface, from the circumference to the centre, is the natural cause why all the dews and rains which fall upon the island are conveyed in small rivulets towards the middle, where they are emptied into four large basons, each of about half a mile in circuit, and two hundred yards distant from the centre. From these the water is continually exhaled by the sun in the day-time, which effectually prevents their overflowing. Besides, as it is in the power of the monarch to raise the island above the region of clouds

R

clouds and vapours, he can prevent the falling rains and dews whenever he pleases. For the highest clouds cannot rise above two miles, as naturalists agree, at least they were never known to do so in that country.

At the centre of the island there is a chafin about fifty yards in diameter, from whence the astronomers descend into a large dome, which is therefore called *flandona gagnole*, or the *astronomical cave*, situated at the depth of a hundred yards beneath the upper surface of the adamant. In this cave are twenty lamps continually burning, which from the reflection of the adamant, cast a strong light into every part. The place is stored with a great variety of sextants, quadrants, telescopes, astrolabes, and other astronomical instruments. But the greatest curiosity, upon which the fate of the island depends, is a loadstone of a prodigious size, in shape resembling a weaver's shuttle. It is in length six yards, and in the thickest part at least three yards over. This magnet is sustained by a very strong axle of adamant passing through the middle, upon which it plays, and is poised so exactly, that the weakest hand can turn it. It is hooped round with an hollow cylinder of adamant four feet deep, as many thick, and twelve yards in diameter, placed horizontally, and supported by eight adamantic feet, each six yards high. In the middle of the concave side there is a groove two inches deep, in which the extremities of the island are lodged, and turned round as there is occasion.

The stone cannot be moved from its place by any force, because the hoop and its feet are a continued piece with that body of adamant which constitutes the bottom of the island.

By means of this loadstone the island is enabled to rise and fall, and move from one place to another.

for, with respect to that part of the earth which the monarch presides, the stone is endued one of its sides with an attractive power, and the other with a repulsive. Upon placing the magnet erect, with its attractive end towards the island descends; but when the repelling extremity points downwards, the island mounts upwards. When the position of the stone is oblique, the motion of the island is so too: For this magnet the forces always act in lines parallel to its direction.

In this oblique motion the island is conveyed to different parts of the monarch's dominions. To show the manner of its progress, let *AB* represent a line drawn across the dominions of Balnibarbi, let the line *cd* represent the loadstone, of which let *d* be the repelling end, and *c* the attracting end, the island being over *C*; let the stone be placed in the position *cd*, with its repelling end downwards; then the island will be driven upwards equally towards *D*. When it is arrived at *D*, let the stone be turned upon its axle till its attracting extremity points towards *E*, and then the island will be driven equally towards *E*; where, if the stone be again turned upon its axle till it stands in the position *cd*, with its repelling point downward, the island will rise obliquely towards *F*, where, by directing the attracting end towards *G*, the island may be conveyed to *G*, and from *G* to *H*, by turning the stone so as to make its repelling extremity point downwards. And thus, by changing the position of the stone as often as there is occasion, the island is made to rise and fall by turns in an oblique direction, and by those alternate risings and fallings (the obliquity not being considerable) is conveyed from one part of the dominions to the other.

But it must be observed, that this island cannot move beyond the extent of the dominions below; nor can it rise above the height of four miles. For which the astronomers (who have written large systems concerning the stone) assign the following reason: That the magnetic virtue does not extend beyond the distance of four miles, and that the mineral, which acts upon the stone in the bowels of the earth, and in the sea about four leagues distant from the shore, is not diffused thro' the whole globe, but terminated with the limits of the king's dominions; and it was easy, from the great advantage of such a superior situation, for a prince to bring under his obedience whatever country lay within the attraction of the magnet.

When the stone is put parallel to the plane of the horizon, the island standeth still; for in that case the extremities of it, being at equal distance from the earth, act with equal force, the one drawing downwards, the other in pushing upwards, and consequently no motion can ensue.

This loadstone is under the care of certain astronomers, who from time to time give it such positions as the monarch directs. They spend the greatest part of their lives in observing the celestial bodies, which they do by the assistance of glasses far excelling ours in goodness. For, although their largest telescopes do not exceed three feet, they magnify much more than those of an hundred with us, and shew the stars with greater clearness. This advantage hath enabled them to extend their discoveries much farther than our astronomers in Europe; for they have made a catalogue of ten thousand fixed stars, whereas the largest of our books do not contain above one third part of that number. They have likewise discovered two

or *satellites*, which revolve about Mars, one of the innermost is distant from the centre of the primary planet exactly three of his diameters, and the outermost, five; the former revolves in the space of ten hours, and the latter in twenty-four and an half; so that the squares of their periods are very near in the same proportion as the cubes of their distance from the centre of Mars; which evidently shews them to be governed by the same law of gravitation that influences all other heavenly bodies.

They have observed ninety-three different comets, and settled their periods with great exactness. If this be true (and they affirm it with great confidence) it is much to be wished, that their observations were made public, whereby the theory of comets, which at present is very lame and defective, might be brought to the same perfection with the other parts of astronomy.

The king would be the most absolute prince in the universe, if he could but prevail on a ministry to join with him: But these, having their estates now on the continent, and considering that the tenure of a favourite hath a very uncertain tenure, would never consent to the enslaving their coun-

If any town should engage in rebellion or mutiny, fall into violent factions, or refuse to pay the usual tribute, the king hath two methods of enforcing them to obedience. The first and the simplest course is by keeping the island hovering over such a town, and the lands about it, where he can deprive them of the benefit of the sun and the rain, and consequently afflict the inhabitants with dearth and diseases. And if the crime deserves they are at the same time pelted from above with great stones, against which they have no de-

fence but by creeping into cellars or caves, where the roofs of their houses are beaten to pieces. If they still continue obstinate, or offer to raise surrections, he proceeds to the last remedy, letting the island drop directly upon their heads, which makes an universal destruction both of houses and men. However, this is an extremity to which the prince is seldom driven; neither indeed is he willing to put it in execution, nor dare his ministers advise him to an action, which, as it would render them odious to the people, so it would be a great damage to their own estates, which lie all below; for the island is the king's demesne.

But there is still indeed a more weighty reason why the kings of this country have been always averse from executing so terrible an action, unless upon the utmost necessity. For if the town intended to be destroyed should have in it any rocks, as it generally falls out in the larger cities, a situation probably chosen at first with a view to prevent such a catastrophe; or if it abound in high spires, or pillars of stone, a sudden fall might endanger the bottom or under-surface of the island, which, although it consist, as I have said, of an entire adamant, two hundred yards thick, might happen to crack by too great a shock, or burst, by approaching too near the fires from the houses below, as the backs both of iron and stone will often do in our chimnies. Of all this the people are well apprised, and understand how far to carry their obstinacy, where their liberty or property is concerned. And the king, when he is highest provoked, and most determined to press a city to rebellion, orders the island to descend with great gentleness, out of a pretence of tenderness to his people; but indeed for fear of breaking the adamant bottom; in which case, it is the opinion of the

philosophers, that the loadstone could no longer hold it up, and the whole mass would fall to the ground.
By a fundamental law of this realm, neither the king nor either of his two elder sons are permitted to leave the island, nor the queen, till she is child-bearing.

C H A P. IV.

The author leaves Laputa, is conveyed to Balnibarbi, arrives at the metropolis. A description of the metropolis, and the country adjoining. The author is hospitably received by a great lord. His conversation with that lord.

ALTHOUGH I cannot say that I was ill-treated in this island, yet I must confess I thought myself too much neglected, not without some degree of contempt. For neither prince nor people appeared to be curious in any part of knowledge, except mathematics and music, wherein I was far inferior, and upon that account very little regarded.

On the other side, after having seen all the curiosities of the island, I was very desirous to leave it, being heartily weary of those people. They were indeed excellent in two sciences, for which I have great esteem, and wherein I am not conversed, but at the same time so abstracted and involved in speculation, that I never met with such agreeable companions. I conversed only with tradesmen, flappers, and court-pages, during two months of my abode there; by which at last

last I rendered myself extremely contemptible yet these were the only people from whom I could ever receive a reasonable answer

I had obtained by hard study a good degree of knowledge in their language: I was weary of being confined to an island, where I received so little countenance, and resolved to leave it with the first opportunity.

There was a great lord at court nearly related to the king, and for that reason alone used with respect. He was universally reckoned the most ignorant and stupid person among them. He had performed many eminent services for the crown, had great natural and acquired parts, adorned with integrity and honour, but so ill an ear for music that his detractors reported he had been often known to beat time in the wrong place; neither could his tutors, without extreme difficulty, teach him to demonstrate the most easy propositions of the mathematics. He was pleased to shew me many marks of favour, often did me the honour of a visit, desired to be informed in the affairs of Europe, the laws and customs, the manners and learning of the several countries where I had travelled. He listened to me with great attention, and made very wise observations on all I spoke. He had twelve flappers attending him for state, but never made use of them, except at court and in visits of ceremony, and would always command them to withdraw when we were alone together.

I intreated this illustrious person to intercede in my behalf with his majesty for leave to depart, which he accordingly did, as he was pleased to tell me, with regret: For indeed he had made me several offers very advantageous, which I have ever refused, with expressions of the highest acknowledgment.

On the 16th of February I took leave of his
city and the court. The king made me a pre-
sent to the value of about two hundred pounds
sterling, and my protector, his kinsman, as much
more, together with a letter of recommendation
to a friend of his in Lagado, the metropolis. The
ship being then hovering over a mountain about
fifty miles from it, I was let down from the lowest
rope, in the same manner as I had been taken

up. The continent, as far as it is subject to the mo-
tion of the *flying island*, passes under the general
name of Balnibarbi; and the metropolis, as I said
before, is called Lagado. I felt some little satis-
faction in finding myself on firm ground. I walk-
ed to the city without any concern, being clad like
the natives, and sufficiently instructed to
converse with them. I soon found out the per-
son to whom I was recommended, present-
ing my letter from his friend the grandee in the
city, and was received with much kindness.
A great lord, whose name was Munodi, order-
ed me an apartment in his own house, where I
remained during my stay, and was entertained in
the most hospitable manner.

The next morning after my arrival, he took
me in his chariot to see the town, which is about
the bigness of London; but the houses very
ill built, and most of them out of repair.
The people in the streets walked fast, looked wild,
their eyes fixed, and were generally in rags. We
went through one of the town-gates, and went
about three miles into the country, where I saw
many labourers working with several sorts of tools
on the ground, but was not able to conjecture
what they were about; neither did I observe any
cultivation either of corn or grass, although the
soil

soil appeared to be excellent. I could not forbear admiring at these odd appearances both in town and country; and I made bold to desire my conductor, that he would be pleased to explain to me, what could be meant by so many busy hands, and faces, both in the streets and the fields; because I did not discover any good effects that were produced; but, on the contrary, I never knew soil so unhappily cultivated, houses so ill contrived and so ruinous, or a people whose countenances and habit expressed so much misery and want.

This Lord Munodi was a person of the highest rank, and had been some years governor of the island; but by a cabal of ministers was discharged for insufficiency.

However, the king treated him with tenderness as a well-meaning man, but of a low, contentible understanding.

When I gave that free censure of the country and its inhabitants, he made no further answer than by telling me, that I had not been long enough among them to form a judgment; and that the different nations of the world had different customs; with other common topics to the same purpose. But, when we returned to his palace, he asked me how I liked the building, what absurdities I observed, and what quarrel I had with the dress or looks of his domestics? This he made me safely do; because every thing was magnificent, regular, and polite. I answered, that his Excellency's prudence, quality, and fortune, had exempted him from those defects which folly and luxury had produced in others. He said, if I would go with him to his country-house, about twenty miles distant, where his estate lay, there would be more leisure for this kind of conversation. I

excellency, that I was entirely at his disposal ; accordingly we set out next morning.

During our journey, he made me observe the usual methods used by farmers in managing their lands ; which to me were wholly unaccountable ; except in some very few places, I could not see one ear of corn, or blade of grass. But after three hours travelling the scene was wholly altered ; we came into a most beautiful country ; the houses at small distances, neatly built ; the land inclosed, containing vineyards, corn-grounds, meadows. Neither do I remember to have seen a more delightful prospect. His Excellency begged my countenance to clear up ; he told me with a sigh, that there his estate began, and would continue the same, till we should come to his end. That his countrymen ridiculed and despised him for managing his affairs no better, and setting so ill an example to the kingdom ; which never was followed by very few ; such as were stupid and wilful, and weak like himself.

We came at length to the house, which was a noble structure, built according to the rules of ancient architecture. The fountains, walks, avenues, and groves, were all disposed with exact judgment and taste. I gave due notice to every thing I saw, whereof his Excellency took not the least notice till after supper ; there being no third companion, he told me with a very melancholy air, that he doubted he must throw down his houses in town and country to rebuild them after the present mode, destroy all his plantations, and cast others in such a manner as modern usage required, and give the same directions to all his tenants, unless he would submit to incur the censure of pride, singularity, affectation,

fection, ignorance, caprice, and perhaps increase of his majesty's displeasure.

That the admiration I appeared to be under would cease or diminish when he had informed me of some particulars, which probably I never heard of at court, the people there being too much taken up in their own speculations to have regard to what passed here below.

The sum of his discourse was to this effect. That about forty years ago, certain persons were sent up to Laputa, either upon business or diversion; and, after five month's continuance, came back with a very little smattering in mathematics, but full of volatile spirits acquired in that airy region. That these persons, upon their return, began to dislike the management of every thing below, and fell into schemes of putting all arts, sciences, languages, and mechanics upon a new foot. To this end, they procured a royal patent for erecting an academy of projectors in Lagado; and the humour prevailed so strong among the people, that there is not a town of any consequence in the kingdom without such an academy. In these colleges the professors contrive new rules and methods of agriculture and building, and new instruments and tools for all trades and manufactures; where, as they undertake one man shall do the work of ten, a palace may be built in a week, of materials so durable as to last for ever without repairing. All the fruits of the earth shall come to maturity at whatever season we think fit to choose, and increase an hundred fold more than they do at present; with innumerable other happy propositions. The only inconvenience is, that none of these projects are brought to perfection; and in the meantime the whole country lies miserably waste, the houses in ruins, and the people without food and

By all which, instead of being discouraged, they are fifty times more violently bent up. prosecuting their schemes, driven equally on by and despair : That as for himself, being not enterprising spirit, he was content to go on in the old forms, to live in the houses his ancestors had built, and act as they did in every part of without innovation : That some few other of quality and gentry had done the same, were looked on with an eye of contempt and ill, as enemies to the art, ignorant, and ill-monwealth's men, preferring their own ease both before the general improvement of their country.

His Lordship added, that he would not, by any particulars, prevent the pleasure I should take in viewing the grand academy, which he was resolved I should go. He only desiring to observe a ruined building upon the side of a mountain about three miles distant, of which he gave me this account : That he had a very convenient mill within half a mile of his house, turned by a current from a large river, and sufficient for his own family, as well as a great number of his tenants : That about seven years ago, a club of projectors came to him with proposals to demolish this mill, and build another on the side of a mountain, on the long ridge whereof a long canal must be cut for a repository of water, to be conveyed up by pipes and engines to supply the mill. Because the wind and air upon a height agitated the water, and thereby made it fitter for motion, and because the water descending down a mountain, would turn the mill with half the current of a river, whose course is more upon a level. He said, that being then not very well with the world, and pressed by many of his friends, he complied

plied with the proposal; and after employing a hundred men for two years, the work miscarried; the projectors went off, laying the blame entire upon him, railing at him ever since, and putting others upon the same experiment, with equal assurance of success, as well as equal disappointment.

In a few days we came back to town; and the Excellency, considering the bad character he had in the academy, would not go with me himself, but recommended me to a friend of his to bear me company thither. My Lord was pleased to represent me as a great admirer of projects, and a person of much curiosity, and easy belief; which indeed was not without truth, for I had myself been a sort of projector in my younger days.

CHAP. V.

The author permitted to see the grand academy of Lagado. The academy largely described. The arts wherein the professors employ themselves.

THIS academy is not an entire single building, but a continuation of several houses on both sides of a street, which growing waste, was purchased, and applied to that use.

I was received very kindly by the warden, and went for many days to the academy. Every room hath in it one or more projectors; and I believe I could not be in less than five hundred rooms.

The first man I saw was of a meagre aspect, with footy hands and face, his hair and beard long, ragged, and singed in several places. His cloaths, shirt, and skin, were all of the same colour.

been eight years upon a project for extracting beams out of cucumbers, which were to be put into vials hermetically sealed, and let out to the air in raw inclement summers. He told me he did not doubt, that in eight years more he should be able to supply the governor's garden with sunshine at a reasonable rate; but he explained, that his stock was low, and intreated me to give him something as an encouragement of ingenuity, especially since this had been a very bad season for cucumbers. I made him a small present; for my Lord had furnished me with money on purpose, because he knew their practice of begging from all who go to see them.

I went into another chamber, but was ready to be sent back, being almost overcome with a horrible stink. My conductor pressed me forward, conjuring me in a whisper to give no offence, which I could be highly resentful, and therefore I durst not much as stop my nose. The projector of this was the most ancient student of the academy; his face and beard were of a pale yellow; his hands and cloathes daubed over with filth. When I was presented to him, he gave me a close embrace (a compliment I could well have excused.) His employment from his first coming into the academy, was an operation to reduce human excrement to its original food, by separating the several parts, removing the tincture which it receives from the air, making the odour exhale, and scumming off the saliva. He had a weekly allowance from the society, of a vessel filled with human ordure, about the bigness of a Bristol barrel.

I saw another at work, to calcine ice into gunpowder, who likewise shewed me a treatise he had written concerning the malleability of fire which he intended to publish.

There was a most ingenious architect, who contrived a new method for building houses, by beginning at the roof, and working downwards to the foundation, which he justified to me by the practice of those two prudent insects the bee and spider.

There was a man born blind, who had several apprentices in his own condition: Their employment was to mix colours for painters, which the master taught them to distinguish by feeling and smelling. It was indeed my misfortune to find them at that time not very perfect in their lessons, and the professor himself happened to be generally mistaken. This artist is much encouraged and esteemed by the whole fraternity.

In another apartment I was highly pleased with a projector, who had found a device of plowing ground with hogs, to save the charges of plough, cattle, and labour. The method is this: In an acre of ground you bury, at six inches distance and eight deep, a quantity of acorns, dates, chestnuts, and other mast or vegetables, whereof these animals are fondest: Then you drive six hundred or more of them into the field, where in a few days they will root up the ground in search of their food, and make it fit for sowing, at the same time manuring it with their dung: it is true, upon experiment they found the charge and trouble very great, and they had little or no crop. However, it is not doubted that this invention may be capable of great improvement.

I went into another room, where the walls and ceiling were hung round with cobwebs, except a narrow passage for the artist to go in and out. At my entrance he called aloud to me not to disturb his webs. He lamented the fatal mistake the world had been so long in of using silk-worms, while

who had such plenty of domestic insects, who infinitely
s, by called the former, because they understood how
wards weave as well as spin. And he proposed, far-
the l, that by employing spiders, the charge of dy-
e and silks should be wholly saved; whereof I was
convinced, when he shewed me a vast number
d several most beautifully coloured, wherewith he fed
employed spiders, assuring us, that the webs would take a
rich the colour from them; and as he had them of all hues,
ling a, he hoped to fit every body's fancy, as soon as he
to find proper food for the flies, of certain
r lessons, oils, and other glutinous matter, to give a
general strength and consistence to the threads.
d and There was an astronomer, who had undertaken
place a sun-dial upon the great weathercock on
sed with town-house, by adjusting the annual and diur-
wing the motions of the earth and sun so as to answer
ploughed coincide with all accidental turnings of the
: In and.

distance was complaining of a small fit of the cholic,
es, che which my conductor led me into a room where
eof the great physician resided, who was famous for cur-
hundred that disease by contrary operations from the
few days instrument. He had a large pair of bellows,
eir foot a long slender muzzle of ivory: This he con-
he maned eight inches up the anus, and drawing in the
n exper, he affirmed he could make the guts as lank
ry great a dried bladder. But when the disease was
it is more stubborn and violent, he let in the muzzle while
of great bellows were full of wind, which he discharged
to the body of the patient; then withdrew the
walls an instrument to replenish it, clapping his thumb strong-
except against the orifice of the fundament; and this
out. he repeated three or four times, the adventitious
o disturb would rush out, bringing the noxious along
he work with it (like water put into a pump) and the pati-
while w recover. I saw him try both experiments up-
ha

on a dog, but could not discern any effect from the former. After the latter, the animal was ready to burst, and made so violent a discharge, which was very offensive to me and my companions. The dog died on the spot, and we left the doctor endeavouring to recover him by the same operation.

I visited many other apartments, but shall not trouble my reader with all the curiosities I observed, being studious of brevity.

I had hitherto seen only one side of the academy, the other being appropriated to the advancement of speculative learning, of whom I shall say something when I have mentioned one illustrious person more, who is called among them *the universal artist*. He told us, he had been thirty years employing his thoughts for the improvement of human industry. He had two large rooms full of wonderful curiosities, and fifty men at work. Some were condensing air into a dry tangible substance, by extracting the nitre, and letting the aqueous or fluid particles percolate; others softening marble for pillars and pincushions; others petrifying the hoofs of a living horse, to preserve them from foundering. The artist himself was at that time busy upon two great designs; the first to sow land with charity, wherein he affirmed the true seminal virtue to be contained, as he demonstrated by several experiments, which I was not skilful enough to comprehend. The other was, by a certain composition of gums, minerals, and vegetables, outwardly applied to prevent the growth of wool upon the young lambs; and he hoped, in a reasonable time, to propagate the breed of naked sheep all over the kingdom.

We crossed a walk to the other part of the academy, where, as I have already said, the projectors in speculative learning resided.

The first professor I saw, was in a very large
was with forty pupils about him. After saluta-
charge observing me to look earnestly upon a frame,
ons. It took up the greatest part of both the length
doctor breadth of the room, he said, perhaps I might
eration der to see him employed in a project for im-
shall ing speculative knowledge, by practical and
I obse mechanical operations. But the world would soon
ne acal sensible of its usefulness; and he flattered him-
advanc that a more noble exalted thought never
ay som ing in any other man's head. Every one knew,
us per laborious the usual method is, of attaining to
versal and sciences; whereas, by his contrivance, the
employ ignorant person, at a reasonable charge, and
man a little bodily labour, might write books in
al li philosophy, poetry, politics, law mathematics, and
l curi ology, without the least assistance from genius or
condem. He then led me to the frame, about the
extra whereof all his pupils stood in ranks. It was
fluid every feet square, placed in the middle of the
e for room. The superficies was composed of several
e hoofs of wood about the bigness of a dye, but some
ndering ger than others. They were all linked together
pon to slender wires. These bits of wood were co-
th char ed on every square with paper pasted on them;
true to on these papers were written all the words of
l exper language, in their several moods, tenses, and
compre tensions, but without any order. The profes-
appositi then desired me to observe, for he was going
ardly a let his engine at work. The pupils, at his
oon to mand, took each of them, hold of an iron-hand-
le time whereof there were forty fixed round the ed-
all over of the frame; and giving them a sudden turn,
e whole disposition of the words was entirely
the ad anged. He then commanded six and thirty of
projecte lads to read the several lines softly, as they ap-
ared upon the frame; and where they found
three

three or four words together, that might make part of a sentence, they dictated to the four remaining boys, who were scribes. This work was repeated three or four times, and at every turn the engine was so contrived, that the words shifted into new places, as the square bits of wood moved upside down.

Six hours a-day the young students were employed in this labour, and the professor shewed me several volumes in large folio already collected of broken sentences, which he intended to piece together out of those rich materials, to give the world a complete body of all arts and sciences, which however might be still improved, and much expedited, if the public would raise a fund for making and employing five hundred such frames like Lagado, and oblige the managers to contribute to the common their several collections.

He assured me, that this invention had employed all his thoughts from his youth; that he had emptied the whole vocabulary into his frame, and made the strictest computation of the general proportion there is in books between the numbers of particles, nouns, and verbs, and other parts of speech.

I made my humblest acknowledgement to this illustrious person for his great communicativeness, and promised, if ever I had the good fortune to return to my native country, that I would do him justice, as the sole inventor of this wonderful machine; the form and contrivance of which I desired leave to delineate upon paper.

I told him, that although it were the custom of our learned in Europe to steal inventions from each other, who had thereby at least this advantage, that it became a controversy which was the right owner; yet I would take such caution, that he should have the honour entire, without a rival.

the next went to the school of languages, where professors sat in consultation upon improvements of their own country.

The first project was, to shorten discourse, by reducing polysyllables into one, and leaving out verbs and participles; because in reality all things imaginable are but nouns.

The other project was, a scheme for entirely abolishing all words whatsoever; and this was held as a great advantage in point of health, as well as brevity. For it is plain, that every word we speak is in some degree a diminution of our life, by corrosion; and consequently contributes to the shortening of our lives. An expedient was therefore offered, that since words are only names of things, it would be more convenient for all to carry about them such *things* as were necessary to express the particular business they are discourse on. And this invention would certainly have taken place, to the great ease as well as health of the subject, if the women, in consultation with the vulgar and illiterate, had not threatened to raise a rebellion, unless they might be allowed the liberty to speak with their tongues in the manner of their forefathers; such contrivances are irreconcilable enemies to science are the enemies of common people. However, many of the most prudent and wise adhere to the new scheme of expressing themselves by *things*; which hath only the inconvenience attending it, that if a man's business be very great, and of various kinds, he must be obliged in proportion to carry a greater bundle of *things* upon his back, unless he can afford one or two strong servants to attend him. We have often beheld two of those sages almost sinking under the weight of their packs, like peddlers among us; who, when they meet in the streets,

streets, would lay down their loads, open their sacks, and hold conversation for an hour together; then put up their implements, help each other resume their burthens, and take their leave.

But for short conversation a man may carry complements in his pockets, and under his arms enough to supply him; and in his house he cannot be at a loss. Therefore the room where company meet, who practise this art, is full of all *things* ready hand, requisite to furnish matter for this kind of artificial converse.

Another great advantage proposed by this convention was, that it would serve as an universal language to be understood in all civilized nations, whose goods and utensils are generally of the same kind, or nearly resembled, so that their uses might easily be comprehended. And thus ambassadors would be qualified to treat with foreign princes or ministers of state, to whose tongues they were utter strangers.

I was at the mathematical school, where the master taught his pupils after a method scarcely imaginable to us in Europe. The propositions and demonstration were fairly written on a thin wafer with ink composed of a cephalic tincture. The student was to swallow upon a fasting stomach, and for three days following eat nothing but bread and water. As the wafer digested, the tincture mounted to his brain, bearing the propositions long with it. But the success hath not hitherto been answerable, partly by some error in the *quantum* or composition, and partly by the perverseness of lads; to whom this bolus is so noxious, that they generally steal aside and discharge it upwards, before it can operate; neither have they been yet persuaded to use so long an abstinence as the prescription requires.

C H A P. VI.

her account of the academy. The author proposes some improvements, which are honourably received.

the school of political projectors I was but entertained; the professors appearing, in judgment, wholly out of their senses; which is a disease that never fails to make me melancholy. These unhappy people were proposing schemes for advising monarchs to chuse favourites upon the score of their wisdom, capacity, and virtue; of advising ministers to consult the public good; of advising princes to know their true interest, by placing it on the same foundation with the interest of their people; of chusing for employments, persons qualified to exercise them; with many other wild impossible chimæras, that never entered into the heart of man to conceive; and confirmed in me the old observation, that there is nothing so extravagant and irrational, which some philosophers have not maintained for truth. However, I shall so far do justice to this academy, as to acknowledge, that all these schemes were not so visionary. There was a most ingenious doctor, who seemed to be perfectly versed in the whole nature and system of government. This illustrious person had very usefully employed his studies in finding out effectual remedies for all abuses and corruptions, to which the several kinds of public administration are subject, by the vices
or

or infirmities of those who govern, as well as the licentiousness of those who are to obey. In instance ; whereas all writers and reasoners have agreed, that there is a strict universal resemblance between the natural and the political body ; and that there be any thing more evident, than that the health of both must be preserved, and the diseases cured by the same prescriptions ? It is allowed that senates and great counsels are often troubled with redundant, ebullient, and other peccant humours ; with many diseases of the head, and more of the heart ; with strong convulsions, with grievous contractions of the nerves and sinews in both hands, but especially the right ; with spleen, flatulency, vertigos, and deliriums ; with scrophulous tumours, full of foetid purulent matter ; with frothy rustations ; with canine appetites, and crudeness of digestion, besides many others need less mention. This doctor therefore proposed, that upon the meeting of a senate, certain physicians should attend at the three first days of their sitting, and at the close of each day's debate, feel the pulses of every senator ; after which, having maturely considered and consulted upon the nature of the several maladies, and the methods of cure, they should on the fourth day return to the senate-house, attended by their apothecaries store with proper medicines ; and before the members sat, administer to each of them lenitives, aperitives, abstersives, corrosives, restringents, palliatives, laxatives, cephalagics, icterics, apophlegmatics, according to the several cases required, and according as these medicines should operate, repeat, alter, or omit them at the next meeting.

This project could not be of any great expense to the public, and might, in my poor opinion, be of much use for the dispatch of business in those countries

tries, where senates have any share in the legislative power; beget unanimity, shorten debates, open new mouths which are now closed, and close more which are now open; curb the petulance of the young, and correct the positiveness of old; rouse the stupid, and damp the pert. Again; because it is a general complaint, that favourites of princes are troubled with short weak memories; the same doctor proposed, whoever attended a first minister, after having told his business with the utmost brevity, and in the plainest words, should at his departure give the said minister a tweak by the nose, or a kick in the belly, or tread on his corns, or lug him thrice by both ears, or run a pin into his breech, or pinch his arm black and blue, to prevent forgetfulness; and at every levee-day repeat the same operation, till the business were done, or absolutely refused. He likewise directed, that every senator in the great council of a nation, after he had delivered his opinion, and argued in the defence of it, should be obliged to give his vote directly contrary; because if that were done, the result would infallibly terminate in the good of the public.

When parties in a state are violent, he offered a wonderful contrivance to reconcile them. The method is this: You take an hundred leaders of each party; you dispose them into couples of such, whose heads are nearest of a size; then let two operators saw off the *occiput* of each couple at the same time, in such a manner, that the brain may be equally divided. Let the *occiputs* thus cut be interchanged, applying each to the head of his opposite party-man. It seems indeed to be a work that requireth some exactness; but the professor assureth us, that if it were dexterously performed, the cure would be infallible. For he ar-

T gued

gued thus ; that the two half brains being left to debate the matter between themselves within the space of one skull, would soon come to a good understanding, and produce that moderation, as well as regularity of thinking, so much to be wished in the heads of those who imagine they come into the world only to watch and govern its motions. And as to the difference of brains in quantity and quality, among those who are directors in fact, the doctor assured us, from his own knowledge, that it was a perfect trifle.

I heard a very warm debate between two professors, about the most commodious and effectual ways and means of raising money without grieving the subject. The first affirmed, the justest method would be to lay a certain tax upon vices and follies, and the sum fixed upon every man to be rated in the fairest manner by a jury of his neighbours. The second was of an opinion directly contrary, to tax those qualities of body and mind for which men chiefly value themselves ; the rate to be more or less, according to the degrees of excelling ; the decision whereof should be left entirely to their own breast. The highest tax was upon men who are the greatest favourites of the other sex, and the assessments according to the number and nature of the favours they have received ; for which they are allowed to be their own vouchers. Valour, and politeness, were likewise proposed to be largely taxed, and collected in the same manner, by every person's giving his own word for the *quantum* of what he possessed. But as to honour, justice, wisdom, and learning, they should not be taxed at all ; because they are qualifications of so singular a kind, that no man will either allow them in his neighbour, or value them in himself. The women were proposed to be taxed according

their beauty and skill in dressing ; where-
they had the same privilege with the men, to be
determined by their own judgment. But con-
stancy, chastity, good sense, and good nature, were
valued, because they would not bear the charge
of collecting.

To keep senators in the interest of the crown,
it was proposed, that the members should raffle
their employments ; every man first taking an oath,
giving security, that he would vote for the
lot, whether he won or no ; after which the
lot was had in their turn the liberty of raffling upon
the next vacancy. Thus hope and expectation
were kept alive ; none would complain of broken
promises, but impute their disappointments
to fortune, whose shoulders are broader and
stronger than those of a ministry.

Another professor shewed me a large paper of
inquiries, for discovering plots and conspiracies
against the government. He advised great states-
men to examine into the diet of all suspected per-
sons ; their times of eating ; upon which side they
lay in bed ; with which hand they wiped their
sweat ; to take a strict view of their excre-
ments, and from the colour, the odour, the taste,
the consistence, the crudeness, or maturity of
the stool, form a judgment of their thoughts and
intentions. Because men are never so serious, thought-
ful, and intent, as when they are at stool, which
was found by frequent experiment : For in such
circumstances, when he used merely as a trial to
consider which was the best way of murdering the
king, his ordure would have a tincture of green ;
quite different, when he thought only of raising
a rebellion, or burning the metropolis.

The whole discourse was written with great ac-
curacy, containing many observations both cu-

rious and useful for politicians ; but, as I conceived, not altogether compleat. This I ventured to tell the author, and offered, if he pleased, to supply him with some additions. He received my proposition with more compliance than is usual among writers, especially those of the projective species ; professing he would be glad to receive further information.

I told him, that in the kingdom of Tribnia, the natives called Langden, where I had sojourned some time in my travels, the bulk of the people consist in a manner wholly of discoverers, witnesses, informers, accusers, prosecutors, evidences, swearers, together with their several subservient and subaltern instruments, all under the colours, conduct, and pay of ministers of state and their deputies. The plots in that kingdom are usually the workmanship of those persons who desire to raise their own characters of profound politicians ; to restore new vigour to a crazy administration ; to stifle or divert general discontents ; to fill the coffers with forfeitures ; and raise or sink the opinion of public credit, as either shall best answer their private advantage. It is first agreed, and settled among them, what suspected persons shall be accused of a plot ; then effectual care is taken to secure all their letters and papers, and put the owners in chains.

These papers are delivered to a set of artists very dexterous in finding out the mysterious meaning of words, syllables, and letters : For instance they can discover a close-stool to signify a private council ; a flock of geese, a senate ; a lame dog an invader ; the plague, a standing army ; a buzzard, a prime minister ; the gout, a high priest. A gibbet, a secretary of state ; a chamber-pot, a committee of grandees ; a sieve, a court-lady ;

broom

I conceived, a revolution; a mouse-trap, an employ-
ment; a bottomless pit, a treasury; a sink, a court;
pleased, and bells, a favourite; a broken reed, a court
received office; an empty tun, a general; a running
is used in the administration.

When this method fails, they have two others
to receive effectual, which the learned among them call
ciphers and *anagrams*. *First*, they can decipher
tribnia, initial letters into political meanings. Thus,
d sojourne, shall signify a plot, *B*, a regiment of horse,
the people, a fleet at sea; or, *secondly*, by transposing the
witnessers of the alphabet in any suspected paper, they
es, swear, may open the deepest designs of a discontented
vient any. So, for example, if I should say in a letter
ours, to my friend, *Our brother Tom has just got the piles*,
their faithful decipherer would discover, that the same
usually which compose that sentence may be ana-
to read into the following words, *Resist*,———a *plot*
cians; *brought home*———*The Tour*. And this is the
ation; a grammatical method.

fill the The professor made great acknowledgments for
the of communicating these observations, and promised to
t answer the honourable mention of me in his treatise.
eed, and saw nothing in this country that could invite
sons the to a longer continuance, and began to think
is taken returning home to England.

C H A P. VII.

The author leaves Lagado, arrives at Maldonada. No ship ready. He takes a short voyage to Gubdubdrib. His reception by the governor.

THE continent, of which this kingdom is a part, extends itself, as I have reason to believe, eastward to that unknown tract of America westward of California, and north to the Pacific Ocean, which is not above a hundred and fifty miles from Lagado; where there is a good port and much commerce with the great island of Luggnagg, situated to the north-west, about 190 degrees north latitude, and 140 longitude. The island of Luggnagg stands south-eastward of Japan about an hundred leagues distant. There is a strict alliance between the Japanese Emperor and the King of Luggnagg, which affords frequent opportunities of sailing from one island to the other. I determined therefore to direct my course this way in order to my return to Europe. I hired two mules, with a guide to shew me the way, and carried my small baggage. I took leave of my noble protector, who had shewn me so much favour, and made me a generous present at my departure.

My journey was without any accident or adventure worth relating. When I arrived at the port of Maldonada (for so it is called) there was no ship in the harbour bound for Luggnagg, or like to be in some time. The town is about as large as Portsmouth, I soon fell into some acquaintance and was very hospitably received. A gentleman of distinction said to me, that since the ships bound

Luggnagg could not be ready in less than a month, it might be no disagreeable amusement for me to take a trip to the little island of Glubdub, about five leagues off to the south-west. He engaged himself and a friend to accompany me, and I should be provided with a small convenient vessel for the voyage.

Glubdubdrib, as near as I can interpret the word, signifies the island of Sorcerers or Magicians. It is about one third as large as the island of Bight, and extremely fruitful: It is governed by the head of a certain tribe, who are all magicians. This tribe marry only among each other, and the eldest in succession is prince or governor. He hath a noble palace, and a park of about three hundred acres, surrounded by a wall of hewn stone twenty feet high. In this park are several inclosures for cattle, corn, and gardening. The governor and his family are served and attended by domestics of a kind somewhat unusual. By his skill in necromancy he hath a power of calling up whom he pleaseth from the dead, and commanding their service for twenty-four hours, but not longer; nor can he call the same persons up more than in less than three months, except upon very extraordinary occasions.

When we arrived at the island, which was about eleven in the morning, one of the gentlemen accompanied me went to the governor, and obtained admittance for a stranger, who came on purpose to have the honour of attending on his majesty. This was immediately granted; and all three entered the gate of the palace, between two rows of guards armed and dressed in a very antic manner, and something in their countenances that made my flesh creep with a horror I cannot express. We passed through several apartments

apartments between servants of the same sort ranked on each side as before, till we came to the chamber of presence, where, after three profound obeisances, and a few general questions, we were permitted to sit on three stools near the lower step of his highness's throne. He understood the language of Balnibarbi, although it were different from that of this island. He desired me to give him some account of my travels; and, to let me see that I should be treated without ceremony, he dismissed all his attendants with a turn of his finger, at which, to my great astonishment, they vanished in an instant, like visions in a dream when we awake on a sudden. I could not recover myself in some time, till the governor assured me that I should receive no hurt; and observing my two companions to be under no concern, who had been often entertained in the same manner, I began to take courage, and related to his highness the short history of my several adventures; yet without some hesitation, and frequently looking behind me to the place where I had seen the domestic spectres. I had the honour to dine with the governor, where a new set of ghosts served the meat, and waited at table. I now observed myself to be less terrified than I had been in the morning. I staid till sun-set, but humbly desired his highness to excuse me for not accepting his invitation of lodging in the palace. My two friends and I lay at a private house in the town adjoining to me, which is the capital of this little island; and the next morning we returned to pay our duty to the governor, as he was pleased to command us.

After this manner we continued in the island for ten days, most part of every day with the governor, and at night in our lodging. I soon grew so familiarized to the sight of spirits, that after

For fourth time they gave me no emotion at
or if I had any apprehensions left, my curio-
prevailed over them. For his highness the
governor ordered me to call up whatever persons
I could chuse to name, and in whatever numbers,
of all the dead, from the beginning of the
world to the present time, and command them to
answer any questions I should think fit to ask;
on this condition, that my questions must be
confin'd within the compass of the times they lived
in, and one thing I might depend upon, that
they would certainly tell me truth; for lying was
of no use in the lower world. I made
humble acknowledgments to his highness for
this great favour. We were in a chamber, from
whence there was a fair prospect into the park.
Because my first inclination was to be enter-
tain'd with scenes of pomp and magnificence, I
desired to see Alexander the Great, at the head of
his army, just after the battle of Arbela, which,
on a motion of the governor's finger, imme-
diately appeared in a large field under the win-
dow where we stood. Alexander was call'd up
into the room: It was with great difficulty that I
understood his Greek, and had but little of my
own. He assured me upon his honour, that he
was not poisoned, but died of a fever by excessive
drinking.

Next I saw Hannibal passing the Alps, who
told me, he had not a drop of vinegar in his
army.

I saw Cæsar and Pompey at the head of their
armies, just ready to engage. I saw the former
in his last great triumph. I desired, that the se-
nate of Rome might appear before me in one large
chamber, and a modern representative in coun-
cil in another. The first seemed to be an assem-
bly

bly of heroes and demi-gods, the other a knot of pedlars, pick-pockets, highwaymen, and bullies.

The governor at my request gave the sign of Cæsar and Brutus to advance towards us. I was struck with a profound veneration at the sight of Brutus, and could easily discover the most consummate virtue, the greatest intrepidity and firmness of mind, the truest love of his country, and general benevolence for mankind, in every lineament of his countenance. I observed with much pleasure that these two persons were in good intelligence with each other; and Cæsar freely confessed to me, that the greatest actions of his own life were unequal, by many degrees, to the glory of taking away. I had the honour to have much conversation with Brutus; and was told, that his ancestors Junius, Socrates, Epaminondas, Cato the younger, Sir Thomas Moore, and himself, were perpetual together: A *sextumvirate*, to which all the ages of the world cannot add a seventh.

It would be tedious to trouble the reader with relating what vast numbers of illustrious persons were called up to gratify that insatiable desire I had to see the world in every period of antiquity placed before me. I chiefly fed my eyes with beholding the destroyers of tyrants and usurpers, and the restorers of liberty to the oppressed and injured nations. But it is impossible to express the satisfaction I received in my own mind, after such a manner as to make it a suitable entertainment to the reader.

CHAP.

C H A P. VIII.

Further account of Glubdubdrib. Ancient and modern history corrected.

HAVING a desire to see those ancients who were most renowned for wit and learning, I apart one day on purpose. I proposed that Homer and Aristotle might appear at the head of their commentators ; but these were so numerous, that some hundreds were forced to attend the court and outward rooms of the palace. I could not distinguish those two heroes at first sight, not only from the croud, but from each other. Homer was the taller and comelier person of the two, walked very erect for one of his age, and his eyes were the most quick and piercing I beheld. Aristotle stooped much, and made use of a staff. His visage was meagre, his hair thin, and his voice hollow. I soon discovered that both of them were perfect strangers to the rest of the company, and had never seen or heard of them before. And I had a whisper from a host, who shall be nameless, that these commentators always kept in the most distant quarters of their principals in the lower world, thro' a consciousness of shame and guilt, because they had horribly misrepresented the meaning of authors to posterity. I introduced Didymus and Eustathius to Homer, and prevailed on him to treat them better than perhaps they deserved, for he found they wanted a genius to enter into the mind of a poet. But Aristotle was out of all patience

tience with the account I gave him of Scotus Ramus, as I presented them to him, and he asked them whether the rest of the tribe were as gundunces as themselves?

I then desired the governor to call up Descartes and Gassendi, with whom I prevailed to expose their systems to Aristotle. This great philosopher freely acknowledged his own mistakes in natural philosophy, because he proceeded in many things upon conjecture, as all men must do; and he found, that Gassendi, who had made the doctrine of Epicurus as palatable as he could, and the vices of Descartes, were equally to be exploded. He predicted the same fate to *attraction*, where the present learned are such zealous asserters. He said, that new systems of nature were but fashions, which would vary in every age; and even those, who pretend to demonstrate them from mathematical principles, would flourish but a short period of time, and be out of vogue when the taste was determined.

I spent five days in conversing with many of the ancient learned. I saw most of the first Roman emperors. I prevailed on the governor to call up Heliogabalus's cooks to dress us a dinner, but they could not shew us much of their skill for want of materials. A *belot* of Agesilaus made a dish of Spartan broth, but I was not able to swallow a second spoonful.

The two gentlemen who conducted me to the island were pressed by their private affairs to return in three days, which I employed in seeing some of the modern dead who had made the greatest figure for two or three hundred years past in our own and other countries of Europe; and having been always a great admirer of old illustrious families, I desired the governor would call up a dozen or

ings, with their ancestors in order for eight or generations. But my disappointment was grievous and unexpected. For, instead of a long train of royal diadems, I saw in one family two fiddlers, a spruce courtiers, and an Italian prelate. In another, a barber, an abbot, and two cardinals. I saw too great a veneration for crowned heads to any longer on so nice a subject. But as to Counts, Bishops, Dukes, Earls, and the like, I was not so scrupulous. And, I confess, it was not without some reason, that I found myself able to trace the particular features, by which certain families are distinguished up to their originals. I could plainly distinguish from whence one family derives a long chin, a second hath abounded with knaves for two generations, and fools for two more; why a third seemed to be crackbrained, and a fourth to be rascals; whence it came what Polydore Virgil says of a certain great house, *Nec vir fortis, nec puer castus*; how cruelty, falsehood, and cowardice grew to be characteristics, by which certain families are distinguished as much as by their coats of arms; who first brought the pox into a noble house, which hath lineally descended in venereal tumours to their posterity. Neither could I wonder at all this, when I saw such an interruption of lineages by pages, lacqueys, valets, coachmen, gamesters, fiddlers, players, captains, and pickpockets.

I was chiefly disgusted with modern history. Having strictly examined all the persons of the greatest name in the courts of princes for an hundred years past, I found how the world had been corrupted by prostitute writers to ascribe the greatest merits in war to cowards, the wisest counsel to flattery, sincerity to flatterers, Roman virtue to betray-ers of their country, piety to atheists, chastity to sodomites,

Sodomites, truth to informers: How many innocent and excellent persons had been condemned to death or banishment by the practising of great ministers upon the corruption of judges, and the malice of factions: How many villains had been exalted to the highest places of trust, power, dignity and profit: How great a share in the motions and events of courts, councils, and senates, might be challenged by bawds, whores, pimps, parasites, and buffoons: How low an opinion I had of human wisdom and integrity, when I was truly informed of the springs and motives of great enterprises and revolutions in the world, and of the contemptible accidents to which they owed their success.

Here I discovered the roguery and ignorance of those who pretend to write *anecdotes*, or secret history; who send so many kings to their grave with a cup of poison; will repeat the discourse between a prince and chief minister, where no wisdom was by; unlock the thoughts and cabinets of ambassadors and secretaries of state; and have the perpetual misfortune to be mistaken. Here I discovered the true causes of many great events that have surprised the world; how a whore can govern the back-stairs, the back stairs a council, and the council a senate. A general confessed in my presence that he got a victory purely by the force of cowardice and ill conduct; and an admiral, that for want of proper intelligence he beat the enemy, to whom he intended to betray the fleet. Three kings protested to me, that in their whole reigns they never did once prefer any person of merit, unless by mistake, or treachery of some minister in whom they confided; neither would they do it if they were to live again: and they shewed with great strength of reason, that the royal throne could not be supported without corruption, because that power

me, confident, restive temper, which virtue in-
 into a man, was a perpetual clog to public
 ness.
 I had the curiosity to inquire, in a particular man-
 by what method great numbers had procured
 themselves high titles of honour and prodigious
 estates; and I confined my inquiry to a very mo-
 derate period, however, without grating upon pre-
 judices, because I would be sure to give no of-
 fence even to foreigners; for I hope the reader
 will be told, that I do not in the least intend
 to censure my own country in what I say upon this occasion.
 A great number of persons concerned were called
 and upon a very slight examination discovered
 a scene of infamy, that I cannot reflect upon
 without some seriousness. Perjury, oppression,
 extortion, fraud, pandarism, and the like *infirmi-*
 ties, were amongst the most excuseable arts
 they had to mention; and for these I gave, as it
 was reasonable, great allowance. But when some
 confessed they owed their greatness and wealth to
 robbery or incest; others to the prostituting of their
 wives and daughters; others to the betraying
 of their country or their prince; some to poisoning,
 and to the perverting of justice in order to destroy
 the innocent; I hope I may be pardoned, if these
 discoveries inclined me a little to abate of that pro-
 found veneration, which I am naturally apt to pay
 to persons of high rank, who ought to be treated
 with the utmost respect due to their sublime digni-
 ties by us their inferiors.

I had often read of some great services done to
 kingdoms and states, and desired to see the persons
 whom those services were performed. Upon
 inquiry I was told, that their names were to be
 found on no record, except a few of them, whom
 history hath represented as the vilest rogues and

traitors. As to the rest, I had never once heard them. They all appeared with dejected looks, and in the meanest habit, most of them telling me they died in poverty and disgrace, and the rest on a scaffold or a gibbet.

Among others there was one person whose appearance appeared a little singular. He had a youth about eighteen years old standing by his side. He told me he had for many years been commander of a ship; and in the sea fight at Actium had the good fortune to break through the enemy's great line of battle, sink three of their capital ships, and take a fourth, which was the sole cause of Anthony's flight, and of the victory that ensued; that the youth standing by him, his only son, was killed in the action. He added, that upon the consideration of some merit, the war being at an end, he went to Rome, and solicited at the court of Augustus to be preferred to a greater ship, whose commander had been killed; but without any regard to his pretensions, it was given to a boy, who had never seen the sea, the son of Libertina, who waited on one of the Emperor's mistresses. Returning back to his vessel, he was charged with neglect of duty, and the ship given to a favourite page of Publicola, vice admiral; whereupon he retired to a poor farm at a great distance from Rome, and there ended his life. I was so curious to know the truth of this story, that I desired Agrippa might be called, who was admiral in that fight. He appeared, and confirmed the whole account, with much more advantage to the captain, whose modesty had either attenuated or concealed a great part of his merit.

I was surprised to find corruption grown so high and so quick in that empire, by the force of luxury so lately introduced, which made me less wonder at many parallel cases in other countries, where

of all kinds have reigned so much longer, and
the whole praise, as well as pillage, hath
engrossed by the chief commander, who per-
had the least title to either.

every person called up made exactly the same
praise he had done in the world, it gave me
melancholy reflections to observe, how much the
of human kind was degenerated among us
in these hundred years past. How the pox,
in all its consequences and denominations, had
ruined every lineament of an English counte-
enance; shortened the size of bodies, unbraced the
joints, relaxed the sinews and muscles, introdu-
ced a fallow complexion, and rendered the flesh
sour and rancid.

descended so low as to desire, that some En-
glishwomen of the old stamp might be summoned
to appear; once so famous for the simplicity of
their manners, diet, and dress; for justice in their
decrees; for their true spirit of liberty; for their
patriotism and love of their country. Neither could
I wholly unmoved, after comparing the living
with the dead, when I considered how all these
native virtues were prostituted for a piece of
money by their grand-children, who, in selling their
votes, and managing at elections, have acquired e-
very vice and corruption that can possibly be learn-
ed at a court,

C H A P. IX.

The author returns to Maldonada. Sails to the kingdom of Luggnagg. The author confides in his friends. He is sent for to court. The manner of his attendance. The King's great lenity to his subjects.

THE day of our departure being come, I took leave of his Highness the governor of Glubdrib, and returned with my two companions to Maldonada, where, after a fortnight's waiting, a ship was ready to sail for Luggnagg. The gentlemen, and some others, were so generous and kind as to furnish me with provisions, and take me on board. I was a month on this voyage. We had one violent storm, and were under a necessity of steering westward to get into the trade-wind, which holds for above sixty leagues. On the 2^d of April 1708 we sailed into the river of Clumernig, which is a sea-port town at the south-east point of Luggnagg. We cast anchor within a league of the town, and made a signal for a pilot. Two of them came on board in less than half an hour, by whom we were guided between certain shoals and rocks, which are very dangerous in the passage, to a large bason, where a fleet may ride in safety within a cable's length of the town-wall.

Some of our sailors, whether out of treachery or inadvertence, had informed the pilots that I was a stranger, and a great traveller; whereupon these gave notice to a custom-house officer, to whom I was examined very strictly upon my landing. This officer spoke to me in the language of Balnibarbi, which, by the force of much commerce

generally understood in that town, especially by
men, and those employed in the customs. I
gave him a short account of some particulars, and
made my story as plausible and consistent as I could;
I thought it necessary to disguise my country,
and call myself an Hollander, because my inten-
tions were for Japan, and I knew the Dutch
were the only Europeans permitted to enter into
that kingdom. I therefore told the officer, that
I had been shipwrecked on the coast of Balnibar-
th, and cast on a rock, I was received up into
Laputa, or the flying island (of which he had of-
ten heard) and was now endeavouring to get to
the mainland, from whence I might find a convenience
returning to my own country. The officer said,
I must be confined till he could receive orders
from court, for which he would write immediate-
ly, and hoped to receive an answer in a fortnight.
I was carried to a convenient lodging, with a cen-
tinel placed at the door; however, I had the liberty
of a large garden, and was treated with humanity
enough, being maintained all the time at the king's
expense. I was invited by several persons, chiefly
of curiosity, because it was reported that I
came from countries very remote, of which they
had never heard.

I hired a young man, who came in the same
ship, to be an interpreter; he was a native of
Lagnagg, but had lived some years at Maldona-
bar, and was a perfect master of both languages.
With his assistance I was able to hold a conversation
with those who came to visit me; but this consist-
ed only of their questions and my answers.

The dispatch came from court about the time
I expected. It contained a warrant for con-
fining me and my retinue to Traldragdub, or
Trogdrib, for it is pronounced both ways,

as near as I can remember, by a party of ten hor
 All my retinue was that poor lad for an interpreter, whom I persuaded into my service; and my humble request we had each of us a mule ride on. A messenger was dispatched half a day journey before us to give the king notice of our approach, and to desire that his majesty would please to appoint a day and hour, when it would be his gracious pleasure that I might have the honour to *lick the dust before his foot-stool*. This is the court-style, and I found it to be more the matter of form. For, upon my admittance, ten days after my arrival, I was commanded to crawl upon my belly, and lick the floor as I advanced; but, on account of my being a stranger, care was taken to have it made so clean, that the dust was not offensive. However, this was a peculiar grace not allowed to any but persons of the highest rank when they desire an admittance. Nay, sometimes the floor is strewed with dust on purpose, when the person to be admitted happens to have powerful enemies at court. And I have seen a great lord with his mouth so crammed, that, when he had crept to the proper distance from the throne, he was not able to speak a word. Neither is there any remedy; because it is capital for those who receive an audience, to spit or wipe their mouths in his Majesty's presence. There is indeed another custom which I cannot altogether approve of. When the king had a mind to put any of his nobles to death in a gentle, indulgent manner, he commands the floor to be strewed with a certain brown powder of a deadly composition, which being licked up, infallibly kills him in 24 hours. But in justice to this prince's great clemency and the care he hath of his subjects' lives (where in it were much to be wished that the monarch

rope would imitate him) it must be mention-
 his honour, that strict orders are given to
 the infected parts of the floor well washed
 every such execution; which if his domestics
 do, they are in danger of incurring his royal
 censure. I myself heard him give directions
 that one of his pages should be whipt, whose turn
 it was to give notice about washing the floor af-
 ter execution, but maliciously had omitted it;
 which neglect, a young lord, of great hopes,
 going to an audience, was unfortunately poison-
 ed, although the king at that time had no design
 to take his life. But this good prince was so gra-
 cious as to forgive the poor page his whipping,
 and promise that he would do so no more with-
 out special orders.

On my return from this digression: When I had
 got within four yards of the throne, -I raised
 myself gently upon my knees, and then striking
 my forehead seven times against the ground, I
 pronounced the following words, as they had been
 taught me the night before, *Ickpling gloffthrobbs*
serumm blihop mlahsnalt zwin tnodoalkuffh
ghad gurdubb asht. This is the compliment
 established by the laws of the land for all persons
 admitted to the king's presence. It may be ren-
 dered into English thus: *May your celestial Majes-*
ty outlive the sun eleven moons and an half. To
 the king returned some answer, which altho'
 I could not understand, yet I replied as I had been
 directed: *Flute drin yalerick dwuldorn prastrad mir-*
rah, which properly signifies, *My tongue is in the*
mouth of my friend; and by this expression was
 meant, that I desired leave to bring my interpre-
 ter; whereupon the young man already mention-
 ed was introduced, by whose intervention I an-
 swered as many questions as his Majesty could
 put

put in above an hour. I spoke in the Balnibian tongue, and my interpreter delivered the meaning in that of Luggnagg.

The king was much delighted with my company, and ordered his Bliffmarklub, or high chamberlain, to appoint a lodging in the court for me and my interpreter, with a daily allowance for table, and a large purse of gold for my commences.

I staid three months in this country out of perfect obedience to his majesty, who was pleased highly to favour me, and made me very honorable offers. But I thought it more consistent in prudence and justice to pass the remainder of my days with my wife and family.

CHAP. X.

The Luggnuggians commended. A particular description of the Struldbrugs, with many conversations between the author and some eminent persons upon that subject.

THE Luggnuggians are a polite and generous people; and although they are not without some share of that pride which is peculiar to eastern countries, yet they shew themselves courteous to strangers, especially such who are countenanced by the court. I had many acquaintances among persons of the best fashion; and being always attended by my interpreter, the conversation we had was not disagreeable.

One day, in much good company, I was asked by a person of quality, whether I had seen any

Struldbrugs, or Immortals. I said, I had
and desired he would explain to me what he
by such an appellation applied to a mortal
He told me, that sometimes, though
rarely, a child happened to be born in a fa-
with a red circular spot in the forehead, di-
over the left eye-brow, which was an in-
mark that it should never die. The spot,
described it, was about the compass of a sil-
ver-pence, but in the course of time grew
and changed its colour; for at twelve years
became green, so continued till five-and-
then turned to a deep blue; at five and-
it grew coal-black, and as large as an Eng-
ling; but never admitted any farther alter-

He said, these births were so rare, that
I did not believe there could be above eleven
Struldbrugs of both sexes in the whole
island, of which he computed about fifty in the
capital, and among the rest a young girl, born
three years ago: That these productions
were not peculiar to any family, but a mere effect
of chance; and the children of the Struldbrugs
themselves were equally mortal with the rest of
the people.

I freely own myself to have been struck with
inexpressible delight upon hearing this account:
The person who gave it me, happening to un-
derstand the Balnibarbian language, which I spoke
well, I could not forbear breaking out into
exclamations perhaps a little too extravagant. I
went out, as in a rapture, Happy nation, where
every child hath at least a chance for being im-
mortal! Happy people, who enjoy so many living
examples of ancient virtue, and have masters ready
to instruct them in the wisdom of all former ages!
The happiest beyond all comparison are those ex-
cellent

cellent Struldbugs, who being born exempt from that universal calamity of human nature, have their minds free and disengaged, without the weakness and depression of spirits caused by the continual apprehension of death. I discovered my admiration, that I had not observed any of these illustrious persons at court; the black spot on the forehead being so remarkable a distinction, that I could not have easily overlooked it: And it was impossible that his majesty, a most judicious prince, should not provide himself with a good number of wise and able counsellors. Yet perhaps the vigilance of those reverend sages was too strict for the corrupt and libertine manners of a court. And I have often find by experience, that young men are too opinionative and volatile to be guided by the sober dictates of their seniors. However, since the king was pleased to allow me access to his person, I was resolved, upon the very first opportunity, to deliver my opinion to him in this matter freely and at large, by the help of my interpreter; and whether he would please to take my advice or no, yet in one thing I was determined, that his Majesty, having frequently offered me an establishment in this country, I would with great thankfulness accept the favour, and pass my time here in the conversation of those superior beings the Struldbugs, if they would please to admit me.

The gentleman to whom I directed my discourse, because (as I have already observed) he spoke the language of Balnibarbi, said to me with a sort of a smile, which usually ariseth from ignorance, that he was glad of any opportunity to keep me among them, and desired my permission to explain to the company what I had spoke. I did so, and they talked together for some time.

own language, whereof I understood not a
word; neither could I observe, by their coun-
tenances, what impression my discourse had made
on them. After a short silence, the same person
said to me, that his friends and mine (so he thought
I expressed himself) were very much pleased with
the judicious remarks I had made on the great
simplicity and advantages of immortal life; and
were desirous to know, in a particular man-
ner, what scheme of living I should have formed
for myself if it had fallen to my lot to have been
a Struldbrug.

I answered, it was easy to be eloquent on so
common and delightful a subject, especially to me,
who had been often apt to amuse myself with vi-
sions of what I should do, if I were a king, a ge-
neral, or a great lord; and upon this very case,
I frequently run over the whole system how I
should employ myself, and pass the time, if I were
to live for ever.

But, if it had been my good fortune to come
into the world a Struldbrug, as soon as I could
leave my own happiness, by understanding the
difference between life and death, I would first re-
solved by all arts and methods whatsoever, to pro-
cure myself riches. In the pursuit of which, by
industry and management, I might reasonably expect,
about two hundred years, to be the wealthiest
man in the kingdom. In the second place, I would
from my earliest youth apply myself to the study
of arts and sciences, by which I should arrive in
time to excel all others in learning. Lastly, I
should carefully record every action and event of
consequence that happened in the public, impar-
tially draw the characters of the several successions
of princes and great ministers of state, with my
observations on every point. I would exact-

ly set down the several changes in customs, language, fashions of dress, diet and diversions, all which acquirements I should be a living treasury of knowledge and wisdom, and certainly become the oracle of the nation.

I would never marry after threescore, but live in an hospitable manner, yet still on the saving side. I would entertain myself in forming and directing the minds of hopeful young men, by convincing them from my own remembrance, experience, and observation, fortified by numerous examples of the usefulness of virtue in public and private life. But my choice and constant companions should be a set of my own immortal brotherhood, among whom I would elect a dozen from the most ancient down to my own contemporaries. Where any of these wanted fortunes, I would provide them with convenient lodges round my own estate, and have some of them always at my table, only mingling a few of the most valuable among you mortals, whom length of time would hardly me to lose with little or no reluctance, and transmit your posterity after the same manner; just as a man diverts himself with the annual succession of pinks and tulips in his garden, without regretting the loss of those which withered the preceding year.

These Struldbrugs and I would mutually communicate our observations and memorials through the course of time; remark the several gradations by which corruption steals into the world, and oppose it in every step, by giving perpetual warning and instruction to mankind; which, added to the strong influence of our own example, would probably prevent that continual degeneracy of human nature so justly complained of in all ages.

Add to all this the pleasure of seeing the various revolutions

utions of states and empires; the changes in
 lower and upper world; ancient cities in ruins,
 obscure villages become the seats of kings;
 rivers lessening into shallow brooks; the
 leaving one coast dry, and overwhelming
 the discovery of many countries yet un-
 der; barbarity over-running the politest na-
 tions, and the most barbarous become civilized. I
 then see the discovery of the *longitude*, the
eternal motion, the *universal medicine*, and many
 great inventions brought to the utmost per-
 fection.
 That wonderful discoveries should we make
 in astronomy, by out-living and confirming our
 predictions, by observing the progress and
 returns of comets, with the changes of motion in
 the sun, moon, and stars.
 enlarged upon many other topics, which the
 desire of endless life and sublunary happi-
 ness could easily furnish me with. When I had
 finished, and the sum of my discourse had been in-
 troduced, as before, to the rest of the company,
 there was a good deal of talk among them in the
 praise of the country, not without some laugh-
 ing at my expence. At last the same gentleman,
 who had been my interpreter, said he was desired
 by the rest to set me right in a few mistakes,
 which I had fallen into through the common im-
 perfections of human nature, and upon that allowance
 was less answerable for them. That this breed
 of *truldrugs* was peculiar to their country; for
 there were no such people either in *Balnibarbi* or
Laputa, where he had the honour to be ambassador
 to his Majesty, and found the natives in both
 kingdoms very hard to believe that the fact
 was possible; and it appeared from my astonish-
 ment, when he first mentioned the matter to me,
 that

that I received it as a thing wholly new, scarcely to be credited. That in the two kingdoms above mentioned, where during his residence he had conversed very much, he observed life to be the universal desire and wish of mankind. That whoever had one foot in the grave, was to hold back the other as strongly as he could. That the oldest had still hopes of living one longer, and looked on death as the greatest evil from which nature always prompted him to treat; only in this island of Luggnagg the appetite for living was not so eager, from the continual example of the Struldbrugs before their eyes.

That the system of living contrived by men was unreasonable and unjust; because it supposed perpetuity of youth, health, and vigour, when no man could be so foolish to hope, however extravagant he may be in his wishes. That the question therefore was not, whether a man would chuse to be always in the prime of youth, attended with prosperity and health? but how he would pass a perpetual life, under all the usual disadvantages which old age brings along with it? although few men will avow their desires of being immortal upon such hard conditions, yet in the two kingdoms before mentioned, of Balnibarbi and Japan, he observed that every man desired to postpone death some time longer, let it approach ever so late; and he rarely heard of any man who died willingly, except he were excited by the extremity of grief or torture. And he appealed to me whether, in those countries I had travelled, as in my own, I had not observed the same general disposition.

After this preface, he gave me a particular account of the Struldbrugs among them. He said they commonly acted like mortals, till about the

new, old, after which by degrees they grew melancholy and dejected, increasing in both till they came to fourscore. This he learned from their confession; for otherwise, there not being two or three of that species born in an age, were too few to form a general observation. When they came to fourscore years, which reckoned the extremity of living in this country, they had not only all the follies and infirmities of other old men, but many more, which arose from the dreadful prospect of never dying. They were not only opinionative, peevish, covetous, morose, vain, talkative; but incapable of friendship, and dead to all natural affection, which descended below their grandchildren. Endless impotent desires are their prevailing passions. But those objects, against which their endeavours are principally directed, are the vices of the younger sort, and the deaths of the old. By reflecting on the former, they find themselves cut off from all possibility of pleasure; and whenever they see a funeral, they lament and repine that they are gone to an harbour of rest to which themselves can never hope to arrive. They have no remembrance of any thing but what they had seen and observed in their youth and middle age, and even that is very imperfect; and for the most part, or particulars of any fact, it is safer to depend on common tradition, than upon their best recollections. The least miserable among them seem to be those who turn to dotage, and endeavour to lose their memories; these meet with more compassion and assistance, because they want many bad qualities which abound in others.

A Struldbrug happen to marry one of his own kind, the marriage is dissolved of course by the courtesy of the kingdom, as soon as the young-

er of the two comes to be fourscore. For the disad-
thinks it is a reasonable indulgence, that those count-
are condemn'd without any fault of their This w
to a perpetual continuance in the world, gs, as
not have their misery doubled by the load five o
wife.

As soon as they have completed the tme at f
eighty years, they are looked on as dead in ough
their heirs immediately succeed to their er, an
only a small pittance is reserved for their sup least c
and the poor ones are maintained at the I wou
charge. After that period, they are held membra
ble of any employment of trust or profit; avoid
cannot purchase lands, or take leases; neith are p
they allowed to be witnesses in any cause, and with
civil or criminal, not even for the decis They a
meers and bounds. Wh

At ninety they lose their teeth and hair; ous,
have at that age no distinction of taste, but early;
drink whatever they can get, without reling th
appetite. The diseases they were subject above
continue, without increasing or diminishing on deft
talking, they forget the common appellat the u
things, and the names of persons, even of by askin
who are their nearest friends and relations, a reme
the same reason they never can amuse them ally
with reading, because their memory will not his re
to carry them from the beginning of a sen They v
to the end; and by this defect they are de ld; an
of the only entertainment whereof they en. B
otherwise be capable. age,

The language of this country being always propor
on the flux, the Struldbrugs of one age do not to b
stand those of another; neither are they on disti
after two hundred years, to hold any convers ere w
(farther than by a few general words) with m.
neighbours, the mortals; and thus they lie The r

For the disadvantage of living like foreigners in their
country.

This was the account given me of the Struld-
world, as near as I can remember. I afterwards
saw five or six of different ages, the youngest not
above two hundred years old, who were brought
before me at several times by some of my friends; but
though they were told that I was a great tra-
veller, and had seen all the world, they had not
the least curiosity to ask me a question; only desi-
ring that I would give them *slumskudask*, or a token of
remembrance; which is a modest way of begging,
to avoid the law that strictly forbids it, because
they are provided for by the public, although in-
adequately with a very scanty allowance.

They are despised and hated by all sorts of peo-
ple. When one of them is born, it is reckoned
a prodigious, and their birth is recorded very parti-
cularly; so that you may know their age by con-
sulting the register; which however hath not been
kept above a thousand years past, or at least hath
been destroyed by time or public disturbances.
The usual way of computing how old they are,
is by asking them what kings or great persons they
can remember, and then consulting history; for
usually the last prince in their mind did not be-
gin his reign after they were fourscore years old.
They were the most mortifying sight I ever be-
held; and the women more horrible than the
men. Besides the usual deformities in extreme
age, they acquired an additional gauntness
in proportion to their number of years, which is
not to be described; and among half a dozen I
distinguished which was the eldest, although
there was not above a century or two between
them.

The reader will easily believe, that from what
I had

I had heard and seen, my keen appetite for perpetuity of life was much abated. I grew heartily ashamed of the pleasing visions I had formed, and thought no tyrant could invent a death, into which I would not run with pleasure from such a life. The king heard of all that had passed between me and my friends upon this occasion, and railed me very pleasantly; wishing I could send a couple of Struldbrugs to my own country, to arm our people against the fear of death; but this it seems is forbidden by the fundamental laws of the kingdom, or else I should have been well content with the trouble and expence of transporting them.

I could not but agree, that the laws of the kingdom relating to the Struldbrugs were founded upon the strongest reasons, and such as any other country would be under the necessity of enacting in the like circumstances. Otherwise, as avarice is the necessary consequent of old age, those immortals would in time become proprietors of the whole nation, and engross the civil power; which, for want of abilities to manage, must end in the ruin of the public.

C H A P. XI.

The author leaves Luggnagg, and sails to Japan. From thence he returns in a Dutch ship to Amsterdam, and from Amsterdam to England.

I THOUGHT this account of the Struldbrugs might be some entertainment to the reader, because it seems to be a little out of the common way;

at least I do not remember to have met the same in any book of travels that hath come to my hands: And if I am deceived, my excuse must be, that it is necessary for travellers, who describe the country, very often to agree in dwelling on the same particulars, without deserving the censure of having borrowed or transcribed from those who wrote before them.

There is indeed a perpetual commerce between this kingdom and the great empire of Japan; and it is very probable, that the Japanese authors may have given some account of the Struldbrugs; but my stay in Japan was so short, and I was so entirely a stranger to the language, that I was not qualified to make any enquiries. But I hope the Dutch, upon this notice, will be curious and able enough to supply my defects.

His Majesty having often pressed me to accept some employment in his court, and finding me absolutely determined to return to my native country, was pleased to give me his licence to depart, and honoured me with a letter of recommendation under his own hand to the Emperor of Japan. He likewise presented me with four hundred and forty-four large pieces of gold (this nation delighting in even numbers) and a red diamond, which I sold in England for eleven hundred pounds.

On the 6th day of May 1709 I took a solemn leave of his Majesty and all my friends. This prince was so gracious, as to order a guard to conduct me to Glanguenstald, which is a royal port to the south-west part of the island. In six days I found a vessel ready to carry me to Japan, and spent fifteen days in the voyage. We landed at a small port town called Xamolchi, situated on the south-east part of Japan; the town lies on the western point, where there is a narrow strait leading northward.

ward into a long arm of the sea, upon the north-west part of which Yedo the metropolis stands. On landing I shewed the custom-house officers my letter from the King of Luggnagg, to his Imperial Majesty. They knew the seal perfectly well; it was as broad as the palm of my hand. The impression was *A king lifting up a lame beggar from the earth*. The magistrates of the town, hearing of my letter, received me as a public minister; they provided me with carriages and servants, and bore my charges to Yedo, where I was admitted to an audience and delivered my letter, which was opened with great ceremony, and explained to the Emperor by an interpreter; who then gave me notice, by his Majesty's order, that I should signify my request, and whatever it were, it should be granted for the sake of his royal brother of Luggnagg. This interpreter was a person employed to transact affairs with the Hollanders; he soon conjectured by my countenance, that I was an European, and therefore repeated his Majesty's commands in low Dutch, which he spoke perfectly well. I answered (as I had before determined) that I was a Dutch merchant shipwrecked in a very remote country, from whence I had travelled by sea and land to Luggnagg, and then took shipping for Japan, where I knew my countrymen often traded, and with some of these I hoped to get an opportunity of returning into Europe; I therefore most humbly entreated his royal favour, to give order that I should be conducted in safety to Nangasack: To this I added another petition, that for the sake of my patron the King of Luggnagg, his Majesty would condescend to excuse my performing the ceremony imposed on my countrymen, of *trampling upon the crucifix*; because I had been thrown in to his kingdom by my misfortunes, without any intention of trading

When this Emperor, he believed I made any doubt, but rather, for to gratify the mark of his clarity of mind, he commanded to be discovered. For he discovered I cut my thanks by the some troops Nangasack, they me satisfied the business. On the 9th day, after a season fell into going to the of 450 tuns my study. The soldiers they were, and could probable. I knew to invent. I needed to be island. I Theodorus voyage geon, he ing

When this latter petition was interpreted to the Emperor, he seemed a little surpris'd ; and said, I believ'd I was the first of my countrymen who made any scruple in this point ; and that he believ'd to doubt, whether I was a real Hollander or not ; but rather suspected I must be a Christian. However, for the reasons I had offer'd, but chiefly to gratify the King of Luggnagg by an uncommon mark of his favour, he would comply with the liberality of my humour ; but the affair must be managed with dexterity, and his officers should be commanded to let me pass as it were by forgetfulness. For he assur'd me, that if the secret should be discovered by my countrymen the Dutch, they would cut my throat in the voyage. I returned thanks by the interpreter for so unusual a favour ; some troops being at that time on their march from Nangasac, the commanding officer had orders to convey me safe thither, with particular instructions about the business of the *crucifix*.

On the 9th day of June 1709 I arriv'd at Nangasac, after a very long and troublesome journey. I soon fell into company of some Dutch sailors belonging to the Amboyna of Amsterdam, a stout ship of 450 tons. I had liv'd long in Holland, pursuing my studies at Leyden, and I spoke Dutch well. The seamen soon knew from whence I came ; they were curious to inquire into my voyages, and course of life. I made up a story as short and probable as I could, but conceal'd the greatest part. I knew many persons in Holland ; I was oblig'd to invent names for my parents, whom I pretended to be obscure people in the province of Gelderland. I would have given the captain (one Theodorus Vangrault) what he pleas'd to ask for my voyage to Holland ; but understanding I was a surgeon, he was contented to take half the usual rate, on

on condition that I would serve him in the way my calling. Before we took shipping, I was often asked by some of the crew, whether I had performed the ceremony above mentioned? I evaded the question by general answers, that I had satisfied the Emperor and court in all particulars. However, a malicious rogue of a skipper went to an officer, and pointing to me, told him, I had not yet *trampled on the crucifix*: But the other, who had received instructions to let me pass, gave the rascal twenty strokes on the shoulders with a bamboo; after which I was no more troubled with such questions.

Nothing happened worth mentioning in this voyage. We sailed with a fair wind to the Cape of Good Hope, where we staid only to take in fresh water. On the 10th of April 1710 we arrived safe to Amsterdam, having lost only three men by sickness in the voyage, and a fourth who fell from the fore-mast into the sea, not far from the coast of Guinea. From Amsterdam I soon after sailed for England, in a small vessel belonging to that city.

On the 16th of April we put in at the Downs, landed next morning, and saw once more my native country, after an absence of five years, and six months complete. I went straight to Redriff, where I arrived the same day at two in the afternoon, and found my wife and family in good health.

PAR

T R

P

VOYAG

H

the author se
conspire ag
cabin. Set
travels up i
part of an
Honynhn

Continued
about five
ould have
well. I
repted an
of the A
ns: For I
rown wear
which howe
ak a skilful
stefoy, int
pon the 7th
met with

TRAVELS.

PART IV.

VOYAGE to the COUNTRY of the HOUYHNHMS.

C H A P. I.

*The author sets out as captain of a ship. His men
conspire against him, confine him a long time to his
cabin. Set him on shore in an unknown land. He
travels up into the country. The Yahoos, a strange
sort of animal, described. The author meets two
Houyhnhms.*

Continued at home with my wife and children
about five months in a very happy condition, if
I could have learned the lesson of knowing when I
was well. I left my poor wife big with child, and
accepted an advantageous offer made me to be cap-
tain of the Adventure, a stout merchantman of 350
tons: For I understood navigation well; and being
grown weary of a surgeon's employment at sea,
which however I could exercise upon occasion, I
took a skilful young man of that calling, one Robert
Farrifoy, into my ship. We set sail from Portsmouth
upon the 7th day of September 1710; on the 14th,
we met with Captain Pocock of Bristol at Teneriff,
Y who

who was going to the bay of Campeachy to cut logwood. On the 16th, he was parted from us by a storm; I heard since my return, that his ship foundered, and none escaped but one cabin boy. He was an honest man, and a good sailor, but a little too positive in his own opinions, which was the cause of his destruction, as it hath been of several others. For if he had followed my advice, he might have been safe at home with his family at that time, as well as myself.

I had several men died in my ship of calenture so that I was forced to get recruits out of Barbadoes and the Leeward Islands, where I touched by the direction of the merchants who employed me; which I had soon too much cause to repent for I found afterwards, that most of them had been Buccaneers. I had fifty hands on board; and my orders were, that I should trade with the Indians in the South sea, and make what discoveries I could. These rogues whom I had picked up, debauched many other men, and they all formed a conspiracy to seize the ship, and secure me; which they did one morning, rushing into my cabin, and binding me hand and foot, threatening to throw me over-board if I offered to stir. I told them I was their prisoner and would submit. This they made me swear to do, and then they unbound me, only fastening one of my legs with a chain near my bed, and placed a sentry at my door with his piece charged, who was commanded to shoot me dead if I attempted my liberty. They sent me down victuals and drink, and took the government of the ship to themselves. Their design was to turn pirates, and plunder the Spaniards, which they could not do till they got more men. But first they resolved to sell the goods in the ship, and then to go to Madagascar for recruits, several among them having died since my confinement. The Indians, being kept, expecting no other ship, often thronged upon the beach, which came from the ships, and were much as they forced me to my best friend, and take except my health, search my money I had, they rowed down on a frigate, and in the country it was in myself; (him) was to get rid of, and I could not recover, writing me, and by the time in this deed, I soon got to a bank to sit to do. I went into the first favour, from the toys, with in those, out me. They regularly great pleasure.

inment. They sailed many weeks, and traded with the Indians; but I knew not what course they took, being kept a close prisoner in my cabin, and expecting nothing less than to be murdered, as they often threatened me.

Upon the 9th day of May 1711, one James which came down to my cabin, and said he had orders from the captain to set me a shore. I expostulated with him, but in vain; neither would he so much as tell me who their new captain was. They forced me into the long-boat, letting me put my best suit of cloathes, which were as good as new, and take a small bundle of lincn, but no arms except my hanger; and they were so civil as not to search my pockets, into which I conveyed what money I had, with some other little necessaries. They rowed me about a league; and then set me down on a strand. I desired them to tell me what country it was: They all swore they knew no more than myself; but said, that the captain (as they call him) was resolved, after they had sold the lad, to get rid of me in the first place where they should discover land. They pushed off immediately, bidding me to make haste for fear of being over-taken by the tide, and so bade me farewell.

In this desolate condition I advanced forward, and soon got upon firm ground, where I sat down on a bank to rest myself, and consider what I had yet to do. When I was a little refreshed, I went into the country, resolving to deliver myself to the first savages I should meet, and purchase my freedom from them by some bracelets, glass rings, and other toys, which sailors usually provide themselves with in those voyages, and whereof I had some about me. The land was divided by long rows of trees, regularly planted, but naturally growing; there was great plenty of grass, and several fields of oats.

I walked very circumspectly for fear of being surpris'd, or suddenly shot with an arrow from behind, or on either side. I fell into a beaten road where I saw many tracks of human feet, and some of cows, but most of horses. At last I beheld several animals in a field, and one or two of the same kind sitting in trees. Their shape was very singular and deformed, which a little discomposed me so that I lay down behind a thicket to observe them better. Some of them coming forward near the place where I lay, gave me an opportunity of distinctly marking their form. Their heads and breasts were covered with a thick hair, some frizzled, and others lank; they had beards like goats and a long ridge of hair down their backs, and the fore-parts of their legs and feet; but the rest of their bodies were bare, so that I might see their skins, which were of a brown buff colour. They had no tails, nor any hair at all on their buttocks except about the *anus*; which I presume Nature had placed there to defend them, as they sat on the ground; for this posture they used, as well as lying down, and often stood on their hind-feet. They climbed high trees as nimbly as a squirrel, for they had strong extended claws before and behind, terminating in sharp points, and hooked. They would often spring, and bound, and leap with prodigious agility. The females were not so large as the males; they had long lank hair on their heads but none on their faces, nor any thing more than a sort of down on the rest of their bodies, except about the *anus* and *pudenda*. Their dug hung between their fore-feet, and often reached almost to the ground as they walked. The hair of both sexes was of several colours, brown, red, black and yellow. Upon the whole, I never beheld, in all my travels, so disagreeable an animal, or one again

which I naturally that think apt and av road, hope Indian. these creatures to m distorted and sta fore; then w, whether tell: But blow w like with t provoked now that I. When d roared me flocking, and ma of a tree em off by ried broo into the charge their escaped p the tree which fell a In the m to run a which I the road, w em into and, I say which my was the cau which

which I naturally conceived so strong an antipathy. That thinking I had seen enough, full of contempt and aversion, I got up, and pursued the bear-road, hoping it might direct me to the cabbin of the Indian. I had not got far, when I met one of these creatures full in my way, and coming up directly to me. The ugly monster, when he saw me, distorted several ways every feature of his visage, and stared as at an object he had never seen before; then approaching nearer, lifted up his fore-paw, whether out of curiosity or mischief, I could not tell: But I drew my hanger, and gave him a good blow with the flat side of it; for I durst not strike with the edge, fearing the inhabitants might be provoked against me, if they should come to know that I had killed or maimed any of their cat-brothers. When the beast felt the smart, he drew back, and roared so loud, that a herd of at least forty came flocking about me from the next field, howling, and making odious faces; but I ran to the bottom of a tree, and leaning my back against it, kept them off by waving my hanger. Several of this cursed brood getting hold of branches behind, leapt up into the tree, from whence they began to discharge their excrements on my head: However, I escaped pretty well, by sticking close to the stem of the tree; but was almost stifled with the filth, which fell about me on every side.

In the midst of this distress, I observed them all to run away on a sudden as fast as they could; which I ventured to leave the tree, and pursue the road, wondering what it was that could put them into the fright. But looking on my left hand, I saw a horse walking softly in the field; which my persecutors having sooner discovered, was the cause of their flight. The horse started a little when he came near me; but soon recovering,

himself, looked full in my face, with manifest tokens of wonder : He viewed my hands and feet, walking round me several times. I would have pursued my journey, but he placed himself directly in the way, yet looking with a very mild aspect, never offering the least violence. We stood gazing at each other for some time ; at last I took the boldness to reach my hand towards his neck, with a design to stroak it, using the common style and whistle of jockies, when they are going to handle a strange horse. But this animal seemed to receive my civilities with disdain, shook his head, and bent his brows, softly raising up his right fore-foot, to remove my hand. Then he neighed three or four times, but in so different a cadence, that I almost began to think he was speaking to himself in some language of his own.

While he and I were thus employed, another horse came up ; who applying himself to the first in a very formal manner, they gently struck each other's right hoof before, neighing several times by turns, and varying the sound, which seemed to be almost articulate. They went some paces off, as if it were to confer together, walking side by side, backward and forward, like persons deliberating upon some affair of weight, but often turning their eyes towards me, as it were to watch that I might not escape. I was amazed to see such actions and behaviour in brute beasts ; and concluded with myself, that if the inhabitants of this country were endued with a proportionable degree of reason, they must needs be the wisest people upon earth. This thought gave me so much comfort, that I resolved to go forward, until I could discover some house or village, or meet with any of the natives, leaving the two horses to discourse together as they pleased. But the first, who was a dapple grey, observing

to steal off, neighed after me in so expressive a manner, that I fancied myself to understand what he meant; whereupon I turned back, and came near to expect his farther commands, but concealed my fear as much as I could; for I began to be in some pain, how this adventure might terminate; and the reader will easily believe, I did not much like my present situation.

The two horses came up close to me, looking with great earnestness upon my face and hands. The grey steed rubbed my hat all round with his fore hoof, and discomposed it so much, that I was forced to adjust it better, by taking it off, and putting it again; whereat both he and his companion (who was a brown bay) appeared to be much surprised; the latter felt the lappet of my coat, and leading it to hang loose about me, they both looked with new signs of wonder. He stroaked my right hand, seeming to admire the softness and colour; but he squeezed it so hard between his hoof and the pastern, that I was forced to roar; after which they both touched me with all possible tenderness. They were under great perplexity about my shoes and stockings, which they felt very often, neighing to each other, and using various gestures not unlike those of a philosopher, when he would attempt to solve some new and difficult phenomenon.

Upon the whole, the behaviour of these animals was so orderly and rational, so acute and judicious, that I at last concluded they must needs be magicians, who had thus metamorphosed themselves upon some design, and seeing a stranger in the way, resolved to divert themselves with him; or perhaps were really amazed at the sight of a man so very different in habit, feature, and complexion, from those who might probably live in so remote a climate.

mate. Upon the strength of this reasoning, I ventured to address them in the following manner. Gentlemen, if you be conjurers, as I have good cause to believe you can understand any language, therefore I make bold to let your worships know that I am a poor distressed Englishman, driven by misfortunes upon your coast; and I intreat one of you to let me ride upon his back, as if he were a real horse, to some house or village, where I can be relieved: In return of which favour, I will make you a present of this knife and bracelet (taking them out of my pocket.) The two creatures stood silent while I spoke, seeming to listen with great attention; and when I had ended, they neighed frequently towards each other, as if they were engaged in serious conversation. I plainly observed that their language expressed the passions very well, and the words might with little pains be resolved into an alphabet more easily than the Chinese.

I could frequently distinguish the word *yahoo*, which was repeated by each of them several times: And although it was impossible for me to conjecture what it meant, yet while the two horses were busy in conversation, I endeavoured to practise this word upon my tongue; and as soon as they were silent, I boldly pronounced *yahoo* in a loud voice, imitating at the same time, as near as I could, the neighing of a horse: At which they were both visibly surpris'd; and the grey repeated the same word twice, as if he meant to teach me the right accent, wherein I spoke after him as well as I could; and found myself perceivably to improve every time, though very far from any degree of perfection. Then the bay tried me with a second word, much harder to be pronounced: But reducing it to the English orthography, may be spelt thus, Hou-yhnhnm. I did not succeed in this so well as the

former;

mer; but
ter fortun
capacity.
After some
dured mig
leaves v
other's
I should
prudent to
hor. Wh
ould cry
d gave h
I was w
which he

the author c
The house
food of th
for want
ner of fe

HAVING
to a
luck in t
roof was lo
gn to be
boys, which
the savage
hopes the
encourage
made me a
with a sm
extending
were thre

mer ; but after two or three farther trials, I had
er fortune ; and they both appeared amazed at
capacity.

After some farther discourse, which I then con-
sured might relate to me, the two friends took
er leaves with the same compliment of striking
by other's hoof ; and the grey made me signs
of that I should walk before him ; wherein I thought
e prudent to comply, till I could find a better di-
ector. When I offered to slacken my pace, he
ould cry *hhuun, hhuun* ; I guessed his meaning,
d gave him to understand, as well as I could,
at I was weary, and not able to walk faster ; up-
n which he would stand a while, to let me rest.

C H A P. II.

*the author conducted by a Houyhnhnm to his house.
The house described. The author's reception. The
food of the Houyhnhnms. The author in distress
for want of meat, is at last relieved. His man-
ner of feeding in this country.*

HAVING travelled about three miles, we came
to a long kind of building, made of timber
laid in the ground, and wattled across : The
roof was low, and covered with straw. I now be-
gan to be a little comforted ; and took out some
toys, which travellers usually carry for presents to
the savage Indians of America and other parts, in
hopes the people of the house would be thereby
encouraged to receive me kindly. The host
made me a sign to go in first ; it was a large room,
with a smooth clay floor, and a rack and manger,
extending the whole length on one side. There
were three nags and two mares, not eating, but
some

some of them sitting down upon their hams, which I very much wondered at; but wondered more to see the rest employed in domestic business; these seemed but ordinary cattle: However, this confirmed my first opinion, that a people, who could so far civilize brute animals, must needs excell in wisdom all the nations of the world. The grey came in just after, and thereby prevented any ill treatment which the others might have given me. He neighed to them several times in a style of authority, and received answers.

Beyond this room there were three others reaching the length of the house, to which you passed through three doors opposite to each other, in the manner of a vista. We went through the second room towards the third; here the grey walked in first, beckoning to me to attend: I waited in the second room, and got ready my presents for the master and mistress of the house: They were two knives, three bracelets of false pearl; a small looking-glass, and a bead necklace. The horse neighed three or four times, and I waited to hear some answers in a human voice; but I heard no other returns, than in the same dialect, only one or two a little shriller than his. I began to think, that this house must belong to some person of great note among them, because there appeared so much ceremony before I could gain admittance. But, that a man of quality should be served all by horses, was beyond my comprehension. I feared my brain was disturbed by my sufferings and misfortunes: I roused myself, and looked about me in the room, where I was left alone; this was furnished like the first, only after a more elegant manner. I rubbed my eyes often, but the same objects still occurred. I pinched my arms and sides to awake myself, hoping I might be in a dream,

am. I the
earances c
magic.
tions; for
le me a fig
ere I saw
and foal,
straw, no
clean.
The mare
r matt, an
served my
captuous lo
e word Y
eaning of
nd, altho
pronounce;
everlast
ing to m
ord bhuun
understoo
kind of
me distan
nd I saw t
st met af
e flesh of
to be that
ow, dead
ied by th
eam; the
their fore-
The ma
his servan
and take
brought c
ligerly c
thereupon

am. I then absolutely concluded, that all these appearances could be nothing else but necromancy or magic. But I had no time to pursue these relations; for the grey horse came to the door, and gave me a sign to follow him into the third room; where I saw a very comely mare, together with a foal and foal, sitting on their haunches upon mats of straw, not unartfully made, and perfectly neat and clean.

The mare, soon after my entrance, rose from her mat, and coming up close, after having nicely served my hands and face, gave me a most contemptuous look; then turning to the horse, I heard the word *Yahoo* often repeated betwixt them; the meaning of which word I could not then comprehend, although it were the first I had learned to pronounce; but I was soon better informed, to my everlasting mortification; for the horse beckoning to me with his head, and repeating the word *bhuun, bhuun*, as he did upon the road, which I understood was to attend him, led me out into a kind of court, where was another building at some distance from the house. Here we entered, and I saw three of those detestable creatures which I first met after my landing, feeding upon roots and the flesh of some animals, which I afterwards found to be that of asses and dogs, and now and then a crow, dead by accident or disease. They were all tied by the neck with strong wyths fastened to a beam; they held their food between the claws of their fore-feet, and tore it with their teeth.

The master horse ordered a sorrel nag, one of his servants, to untie the largest of these animals, and take him into the yard. The beast and I were brought close together; and our countenances diligently compared both by master and servant, who thereupon repeated several times the word *Yahoo*.

My

My horror and astonishment are not to be described, when I observed in this abominable animal a perfect human figure : The face of it indeed was flat and broad, the nose depressed, the lips large and the mouth wide : But these differences are common to all savage nations, where the lineaments of the countenance are distorted, by the natives suffering their infants to lie grovelling on the earth, or by carrying them on their backs nuzling with their faces against the mother's shoulders. The fore-feet of the *Yahoo* differed from my hands in nothing else but the length of the nails, the coarseness and brownness of the palms, and the hairiness on the backs. There was the same resemblance between our feet, with the same differences, which I knew very well, though the horses did not, because of my shoes and stockings ; the same in every part of our bodies, except as to the hairiness and colour, which I have already described.

The great difficulty that seemed to stick with two horses, was to see the rest of my body so very different from that of the *Yahoos*, for which I was obliged to my cloathes, whereof they had no conception. The sorrel nag offered me a root which he held (after their manner, as we shall describe in its proper place) between his hoof and pastern ; I took it in my hand, and having smelt it, returned it to him again as civilly as I could. He brought out of the *Yahoo's* kennel, a piece of ass's flesh ; but it smelt so offensively, that I turned from it with loathing : He then threw it to the *Yahoo*, by whom it was greedily devoured. He afterwards shewed me a wisp of hay, and a fetlock full of oats ; but I shook my head, to signify that neither of these were food for me. And indeed I now apprehended that I must absolutely starve if I did not get to some of my own species ; for as to those

filthy

by *Yahoos*, although there were few greater
of mankind at that time than myself; yet, I
never saw any sensitive being so detest-
on all accounts; and the more I came near
the more hateful they grew while I staid in
country. This the master horse observed by
behaviour, and therefore sent the *Yahoo* back
his kennel. He then put his fore-hoof to his
mouth, at which I was much surpris'd, although
did it with ease, and with a motion that appear-
perfectly natural; and made other signs to know
that I would eat; but I could not return him such
answer as he was able to apprehend; and if he
understood me, I did not see how it was possi-
ble to contrive any way for finding myself nourish-
ed. While we were thus engaged, I observed
a *Yahoo* passing by; whereupon I pointed to her, and
express'd a desire to go and milk her. This had
effect; for he led me back into the house, and
order'd a mare servant to open a room, where a
good store of milk lay in earthen and wooden ves-
sels, after a very orderly and cleanly manner. She
gave me a large bowl-full, of which I drank very
heartily, and found myself well refreshed.

About noon I saw coming towards the house, a
vehicle drawn like a sledge by four *Yahoos*.
There was in it an old steed, who seem'd to be of
great quality; he alighted with his hind feet forward, ha-
ving by accident got a hurt in his left fore foot.
He came to dine with our horse, who received him
with great civility. They dined in the best room,
and had oats boiled in milk for the second course,
which the old horse eat warm, but the rest cold.
Their mangers were placed circular in the middle
of the room, and divided into several partitions,
in which they sat on their haunches upon bos-
ses of straw. In the middle was a large rack, with

Z

angles

angles answering to every partition of the manger; so that each horse and mare eat their own mash of oats and milk, with much decency and regularity. The behaviour of the young colt and foal appeared very modest; and that of the master and mistress extremely chearful and complaisant to their guest. The grey ordered me to stand near him; and much discourse passed between him and his friend concerning me, as I found by the stranger's often looking on me, and the frequent repetition of the word *Yahoo*.

I happened to wear my gloves, which the master-grey observing, seemed perplexed, discovering signs of wonder what I had done to my fore-feet. He put his hoof three or four times to them, as he would signify that I should reduce them to their former shape, which I presently did, pulling off my gloves, and putting them into my pocket. This occasioned farther talk, and I saw the company was pleased with my behaviour, whereof I soon found the good effects. I was ordered to speak the few words I understood; and while they were at dinner, the master taught me the names of oats, milk, fire, water, and some others; which I could readily pronounce after him, having from my youth a great facility in learning languages.

When dinner was done, the master-horse took me aside, and by signs and words made me understand the concern he was in that I had nothing to eat. Oats in their tongue are called *blum*. This word I pronounced two or three times; but although I had refused them at first, yet upon second thoughts I considered, that I could contrive to make of them a kind of bread, which might be sufficient with milk to keep me alive till I could make my escape to some other country, and to create a new species of my own species. The horse immediately

ed a white
good qu
These
and ru
I made
ound and
water, a
I toast
It was
mon enou
tolerable
ed to hard
eriment I
And I
hour's si
me, I som
bird, by f
gathered
eat as fa
for a r
the wh
but cus
; and I
lt among
duced or
re it is n
ges, or i
we obs
: And a
was a gre
of it in
This is e
wherev
of the rea
we fare
mention t
impossible
order

ed a white mare-servant of his family to bring
good quantity of oats in a sort of wooden

These I heated before the fire, as well as I
and rubbed them till the husks came off,
I made a shift to winnow from the grain.

round and beat them between two stones, then
water, and made them into a paste or cake,

I toasted at the fire, and eat warm with

It was at first a very insipid diet, though

mon enough in many parts of Europe, but

tolerable by time ; and having been often re-

ed to hard fare in my life, this was not the first

eriment I had made how easily nature is satis-

And I cannot but observe, that I never had

hour's sickness while I staid in this island. It

me, I sometimes made a shift to catch a rabbit,

bird, by springs made of *Yahoo's* hair ; and I

gathered wholesome herbs, which I boiled,

eat as fallads with my bread ; and now and

for a rarity, I made a little butter ; and

the whey. I was at first at a great loss for

but custom soon reconciled me to the want

; and I am confident, that the frequent use

lt among us is an effect of luxury, and was first

roduced only as a provocative to drink ; except

ere it is necessary for preserving of flesh in long

ages, or in places remote from great markets.

we observe no animal to be fond of it but

: And as to myself, when I left this country,

was a great while before I could endure the

of it in any thing that I eat.

This is enough to say upon the subject of my

et, wherewith other travellers fill their books,

if the readers were personally concerned whe-

we fare well or ill. However, it was necessary

mention this matter, lest the world should think

impossible that I could find sustenance for three

years in such a country, and among such inhabitants.

When it grew towards evening, the master horse ordered a place for me to lodge in; it was but a few yards from the house, and separated from the stable of the *Yaboos*. Here I got some straw, and covered myself with my own cloathes, slept very sound. But I was in a short time better accommodated, as the reader shall know hereafter, when I come to treat more particularly about my way of living.

C H A P. III.

The author studies to learn the language; the Houyhnhnm, his master, assists in teaching him. The language described. Several Houyhnhnms of quality came, out of curiosity, to see the author. He gives his master a short account of his voyage.

MY principal endeavour was to learn the language, which my master (for so I shall henceforth call him) and his children, and every servant of his house, were desirous to teach me. For they looked upon it as a prodigy, that a brute animal should discover such marks of a rational creature. I pointed to every thing, and inquired the name of it, which I wrote down in my *journal-book* when I was alone, and corrected my bad accent, by desiring those of the family to pronounce it often. In this employment a sorrel nag, one of the under-servants, was very ready to assist me.

In speaking, they pronounce through the nose and throat, and their language approaches nearest to the High Dutch, or German, of any I know in Europe; but is much more graceful and significant.

emperor Charles V. made almost the same observation, when he said, that if he were to speak his horse it would be in High-Dutch.

The curiosity and impatience of my master were so great, that he spent many hours of his leisure to instruct me. He was convinced (as he afterwards told me) that I must be a *Yahoo*; but my teachable-ness, civility, and cleanliness, astonished him; which were qualities altogether opposite to those animals, and was most perplexed about my cloathes, reasoning sometimes with himself whether they were a part of my body; for I never pulled them off till the family were asleep, and got them on before I waked in the morning. My master was eager to learn from whence I came; how I acquired these appearances of reason which I discovered in my actions; and to know my story from my own mouth, which he hoped he should soon do by the great proficiency I made in learning and pronouncing their words and sentences. To help my memory, I formed all I learned into the English alphabet, and writ the words down with the transcriptions. This last, after some time, I ventured to do in my master's presence. It cost me much trouble to explain to him what I was doing: For the inhabitants have not the least idea of books or literature.

In about ten weeks time I was able to understand most of his questions, and in three months could give him some tolerable answers. He was extremely curious to know from what part of the country I came, and how I was taught to imitate a rational creature; because the *Yahoos* (whom he saw I exactly resembled in my head, hands and face, that were only visible) with some appearance of cunning, and the strongest disposition to mischief, were observed to be the most unteachable of all brutes.

brutes. I answered, that I came over the sea from a far place, with many others of my own kind, in a great hollow vessel made of the bodies of trees; that my companions forced me to land on this coast, and then left me to shift for myself. It was with some difficulty, and by the help of many signs, that I brought him to understand me. He replied, that I must needs be mistaken, or that I *said the thing which was not* (for they have no word in their language to express lying or falsehood.) He knew it was impossible, that there could be a country beyond the sea, or that a parcel of brutes could move a wooden vessel whether they pleased upon water. He was sure no Houyhnhnm alive could make such a vessel, nor would trust *Yahoos* to manage it.

The word Houyhnhnm, in their language signifies a *horse*, and, in its etymology, the *perfection of nature*. I told my master, that I was at a loss for expression; but would improve as fast as I could, and hoped in a short time I should be able to tell him wonders: He was pleased to direct his own mare, his colt, and foal, and the servants of the family, to take all opportunities of instructing me; and every day, for two or three hours, he was at the same pains himself: Several horses and mares of quality in the neighbourhood came often to our house, upon the report spread of a wonderful *Yahoo* that could speak like a Houyhnhnm, and seemed in his words and actions to discover some glimmerings of reason. These delighted to converse with me; they put many questions, and received such answers as I was able to return. By all these advantages I made so great a progress, that in five months from my arrival, I understood whatever was spoken, and could express myself tolerably well.

The Houyhnhnms, who came to visit my master

out

of a design of seeing and talking with me, could
believe me to be a right *Yahoo*, because my
had a different covering from others of my

They were astonished to observe me with-
the usual hair or skin, except on my head, face,
hands; but I discovered that secret to my mast-
upon an accident which happened about a fort-
night before.

I have already told the reader, that every night,
when the family were gone to bed, it was my cust-
to strip, and cover myself with my cloathes: It
happened one morning early, that my master sent
me by the sorrel nag, who was his valet; when
I came, I was fast asleep, my cloathes fallen off on
the side, and my shirt above my waist. I waked
at the noise he made, and observed him to deliver
my message in some disorder; after which he went
to my master, and in a great fright gave him a ve-
ry confused account of what he had seen: This I
secretly discovered; for going as soon as I was
ordered to pay my attendance upon his Honour, he
told me the meaning of what his servant had re-
ported; that I was not the same thing when I slept
as I appeared to be at other times; that his valet
observed him some part of me was white, some yel-
low, at least not so white, and some brown.

I had hitherto concealed the secret of my dress,
in order to distinguish myself as much as possible
from that cursed race of *Yahoos*; but now I found
it vain to do so any longer. Besides, I consid-
ered that my cloathes and shoes would soon wear out,
which already were in a declining condition, and
must be supplied by some contrivance from the hides
of *Yahoos*, or other brutes; whereby the whole
secret would be known: I therefore told my mast-
er, that in the country from whence I came, those
of my kind always covered their bodies with the hairs
of

of certain animals prepared by art, as well for decency, as to avoid the inclemencies of air both hot and cold ; of which, as to my own person, I would give him immediate conviction, if he pleased to command me ; only desiring his excuse, if I did not expose those parts that nature taught us to conceal. He said my discourse was all very strange, but especially the last part ; for he could not understand, why nature should teach us to conceal what nature had given : That neither himself nor family were ashamed of any parts of their bodies ; but, however, I might do as I pleased. Whereupon I first unbuttoned my coat, and pulled it off. I did the same with my waistcoat : I drew off my shoes, stockings, and breeches. I let my shirt down to my waist, and drew up the bottom, fastening it like a girdle about my middle to hide my nakedness.

My master observed the whole performance with great signs of curiosity and admiration. He took up all my cloaths in his pattern, one piece after another, and examined them diligently : He then stroaked my body very gently, and looked round me several times ; after which he said, it was plain I must be a perfect *Yahoo* ; but that I differed very much from the rest of my species, in the softness, whiteness, and smoothness of my skin, my want of hair in several parts of my body, the shape and shortness of my claws behind and before, and my affectation of walking continually on my two hinder feet. He desired to see no more ; and gave me leave to put on my cloathes again, for I was shuddering with cold.

I expressed my uneasiness at his giving me so often the appellation of *Yahoo*, an odious animal, for which I had so utter an hatred and contempt : I begged he would forbear applying that word to me, and make the same order in his family, and among his

friends, w
likewise
ering to
self, at
uld last ;
observe
real it.
All this m
thus the
wear out
al contriv
the mean
utmost
le he w
ech and
ether it
ited with
ich I pro
From the
en at to i
ny, and
se, as he
good hu
Every d
ouble he
veral que
ered as v
d ahead
ry imper
veral step
r conver
yself, in
le :
That I c
ad attempt
my own
as in a g

friends, whom he suffered to see me. I request, likewise, that the secret of my having a false ring to my body might be known to none but myself, at least as long as my present cloathing should last; for as to what the serrel nag his valet observed, his Honour might command him to reveal it.

All this my master very graciously consented to; and thus the secret was kept till my cloathes began wear out, which I was forced to supply by several contrivances that shall hereafter be mentioned. In the mean time, he desired I would go on with utmost diligence to learn their language, because he was more astonished at my capacity for speech and reason, than at the figure of my body, whether it were covered or no; adding, that he waited with some impatience to hear the wonders which I promised to tell him.

From thenceforward he doubled the pains he had taken to instruct me; he brought me into all company, and made them treat me with civility, because, as he told them privately, this would put me in good humour, and make me more diverting.

Every day, when I waited on him, beside the trouble he was at in teaching, he would ask me several questions concerning myself, which I answered as well as I could; and by these means he had already received some general ideas, though very imperfect. It would be tedious to relate the several steps by which I advanced to a more regular conversation: But the first account I gave of myself, in any order and length, was to this purpose:

That I came from a very far country, as I already had attempted to tell him with about fifty more of my own species; that we travelled upon the seas in a great hollow vessel made of wood, and larger

larger than his Honour's house. I described the ship to him in the best terms I could, and explained, by the help of my handkerchief displayed, how it was driven forward by the wind. That upon a quarrel among us I was set on shore on this coast, where I walked forward, without knowing whither, till he delivered me from the persecution of those execrable *Yahoos*. He asked me, who made the ship, and how it was possible that the Houyhnhnms of my country would leave it to the management of brutes? My answer was, that I durst proceed no farther in my relation, unless he would give me his word and honour that he would not be offended, and then I would tell him the wonders I had so often promised. He agreed; and I went on by assuring him, that the ship was made by creatures like myself, who in all the countries I had travelled, as well as in my own, were the only governing, rational animals; and that upon my arrival hither, I was as much astonished to see the Houyhnhnms act like rational beings, as he or his friends could be in finding some marks of reason in a creature he was pleased to call a *Yahoo*; to which I owned my resemblance in every part, but could not account for their degenerate and brutal nature. I said farther, that if good fortune ever restored me to my native country to relate my travels hither, as I resolved to do, every body would believe, that I *said the thing which was not*; that I invented the story out of my own head; and (with all possible respect to himself, his family, and friends, and under his promise of not being offended) our countrymen would hardly think it probable, that a Houyhnhnm should be the presiding creature of a nation, and a *Yahoo* the brute.

C H A P. IV.

*Houyhnhnms notion of truth and falsehood.
The author's discourse disapproved by his master.
The author gives a more particular account of himself, and the accidents of his voyage.*

MY master heard me with great appearances of uneasiness in his countenance; because *lying, or not believing*, are so little known in his country, that the inhabitants cannot tell how to behave themselves under such circumstances. And I remember, in frequent discourses with my master concerning the nature of manhood in other parts of the world, having occasion to talk of *lying and false representation*, it was with much difficulty that he comprehended what I meant; although he had otherwise a most acute judgment. For he argued thus: That the use of speech was to make us understand one another, and to receive information of facts: Now, if any one *said the thing which was not*, these ends were defeated; because I cannot properly be said to understand him: And I am so far from receiving information, that he leaves me worse than in ignorance; for I am led to believe a thing *black* when it is *white*, and *short* when it is *long*. And these were all the notions he had concerning that faculty of *lying*, so perfectly well understood, and so universally practised among human creatures.

To return from this digression; when I asserted that the *Yahoos* were the only governing animals in my country, which my master said was altogether past his conception, he desired to know, whether

ther we had Houyhnhnms among us, and what the bottom was their employment. I told him, we had great numbers; that in summer they grazed in the fields, and in winter were kept in houses with hay and oats, where Yahoo-servants were employed to rub their skins smooth, comb their manes, pick their feet, serve them with food, and make their beds. I understand you well, says my master; it is now very plain from all you have spoken, that, whatever share of reason the Yahoos pretend to, they are not so. Houyhnhnms are your masters; I heartily wish our Yahoos would be so tractable. I begged his honour would please excuse me from proceeding any farther, because I was very certain, that the account he expected from me would be highly displeasing. But he insisted in commanding me to let him know the best and the worst: I told him they should be obeyed. I owned, that the Houyhnhnms among us, whom we called *horses*, were the most generous and comely animal we had; that they excelled in strength and swiftness; and when they belonged to persons of quality, were employed in travelling, racing, or drawing chariots; they were treated with much kindness and care, till they fell into diseases, or became foundered in the feet; but then they were sold, and used to all kind of drudgery, till they died; after which their skins were stripped, and sold for what they were worth; and their bodies left to be devoured by dogs and birds of prey. But the common race of horses had not so good fortune, being kept by farmers, and carriers, and other mean people, who put them to greater labour, and fed them worse. I described, as well as I could, our way of riding; the shape and use of a bridle, a saddle, a spur, and a whip of harness and wheels. I added, that we fastened plates of a certain hard substance, called *iron*, on the

the bottom of their feet, to preserve their hoofs from being broken by the stony ways, on which we had travelled.

My master, after some expressions of great indignation, wondered how we dared to venture upon a Houyhnhnm's back; for he was sure that the weakest servant in his house would be able to throw off the strongest Yahoo; or by lying down, and rolling on his back, squeeze the brute to death. He answered, that our horses were trained up from three or four years old to the several uses we intended them for; that if any of them proved intolerably vicious, they were employed for carriages; that they were severely beaten, while they were young, for any mischievous tricks; that the best, designed for the common use of riding or draught, were generally *castrated* about two years after their birth, to take down their spirits, and make them more tame and gentle; that they were extremely sensible of rewards and punishments; but they would please to consider, that they had in the least tincture of reason, any more than the brutes in this country.

He put me to the pains of many circumlocutions, to give my master a right idea of what I spoke; and their language doth not abound in variety of kinds, because their wants and passions are fewer than among us. But it is impossible to express his resentment at our savage treatment of the Houyhnhnm race; particularly, after I had explained the manner and use of *castrating* horses among us, to hinder them from propagating their kind, and to render them more servile. He said, it were possible there could be any country where Yahoos alone were endued with reason, they must be the governing animal, because reason will in time always prevail against brutal strength.

A a

But

But considering the frame of our bodies, and especially of mine, he thought no creature of equal bulk was so ill contrived for employing that reason in the common offices of life ; whereupon he desired to know, whether those among whom I lived resembled me or the *Yahoos* of his country. I assured him, that I was as well shaped as most of my age. But the younger, and the females, were much more soft and tender, and the skins of the latter generally as white as milk. He said, I differed indeed from other *Yahoos*, being much more cleanly, and not altogether so deformed ; but on that point of real advantage, he thought I differed from the worse. That my nails were of no use, either to my fore or hinder-feet ; as to my fore-feet, he could not properly call them by that name, for he never observed me to walk upon them ; that they were too soft to bear the ground ; that I generally went with them uncovered ; neither was the covering I sometimes wore on them of the same shape or so strong as that on my feet behind. That he could not walk with any security ; for if either of my hinder-feet slipped, I must inevitably fall. He then began to find fault with other parts of my body ; the flatness of my face, the prominence of my nose, mine eyes placed directly in front, so that he could not look on either side without turning his head : That I was not able to feed myself without lifting one of my fore feet to my mouth ; and that his fore nature had placed those joints to answer this necessity. He knew not what could be the use of those several clefts and divisions in my feet behind, that these were too soft to bear the hardness and sharpness of stones, without a covering made of the skin of some other brute ; that my whole body wanted a fence against heat and cold, which I was forced to put on and off every day with tedious

and trouble. And, lastly, that he observed every animal in this country naturally to abhor the Yahoos, whom the weaker avoided, and the stronger drove from them. So that, supposing us to have a gift of reason, he could not see how it were possible to cure that natural antipathy which every creature discovered against us; nor consequently how we could tame and render them serviceable. However, he would (as he said) debate the matter farther, because he was more desirous to know my own story, the country where I was born, and the several actions and events of my life before I came hither.

I assured him, how extremely desirous I was that he should be satisfied in every point: But I doubted much whether it would be possible for me to explain myself on several subjects, whereof his Honour could have no conception; because I knew nothing in his country to which I could resemble them. That however I would do my best, and strive to express myself by similitudes, humbly desiring his assistance when I wanted proper words, which he was pleased to promise me.

I said, my birth was of honest parents in an island called England, which was remote from this country as many days journey as the strongest of his Honour's servants could travel in the annual course of the sun: That I was bred a surgeon, whose trade it is to cure wounds and hurts in the body gotten by accident or violence: That my country was governed by a female man, whom we called Queen: That I left it to get riches, whereby I might maintain myself and family when I should return: That in my last voyage I was commander of the ship, and had about fifty Yahoos under me, many of which died at sea, and I was forced to supply them by others picked out from se-

veral nations: That our ship was twice in danger of being sunk; the first time by a great storm, and the second, by striking against a rock. Here my master interposed, by asking me, how I could persuade strangers out of different countries to venture with me, after the losses I had sustained, and the hazards I had run? I said, they were fellows of desperate fortunes, forced to fly from the places of their birth on account of their poverty, or their crimes. Some were undone by law-suits; others spent all they had in drinking, whoring, and gaming; others fled for treason; many for murder, theft, poisoning, robbery, perjury, forgery, coining false money; for committing rapes of sodomy; for flying from their colours, or deserting to the enemy; and the most of them had broken prison. None of these durst return to their native countries, for fear of being hanged, or of starving in a jail; and therefore they were under a necessity of seeking a livelihood in other places.

During this discourse my master was pleased to interrupt me several times. I had made use of many circumlocutions in describing to him the nature of the several crimes for which most of our crew had been forced to fly their country. This labour took up several days conversation, before he was able to comprehend me. He was wholly at a loss to know what could be the use or necessity of practising these vices. To clear up which, I endeavoured to give some him ideas of the desire of power and riches; of the terrible effects of lust, intemperance, malice, and envy. All this I was forced to define and describe, by putting cases, and making suppositions. After which, like one whose imagination was struck with something never seen or heard of before, he would lift up his eyes with amazement and indignation. Power, government,

law, punishment, no terms; which give my But b improve arrived an natur perform; ular acc but esp

author, a the state the prince main the I

THE

follow with materi al times sing ful Houyh I could, trade an answer arose conversation ly set do concern der as w other

war,

law, punishment, and a thousand other things, no terms wherein that language could express; which made the difficulty almost insuperable to give my master any conception of what I meant: But being of an excellent understanding, and improved by contemplation and converse, he soon arrived at a competent knowledge of what human nature in our parts of the world is capable to perform; and desired I would give him some particular account of that land which we call Europe, but especially of my own country,

C H A P. V.

The author, at his master's commands, informs him of the state of England. The causes of war among the princes of Europe. The author begins to explain the English constitution.

THE reader may please to observe, that the following extract of many conversations I had with my master, contains a summary of the most material points which were discoursed at several times for above two years; his Honour often requiring fuller satisfaction, as I farther improved in the Houyhnhnm tongue. I laid before him, as well as I could, the whole state of Europe; I discoursed of trade and manufactures, of arts and sciences; and the answers I gave to all the questions he made as they arose upon several subjects, were a fund of conversation not to be exhausted. But I shall here only set down the substance of what passed between me concerning my own country, reducing it into order as well as I can, without any regard to time or other circumstances, while I strictly adhere to

truth. My only concern is, that I shall hardly be able to do justice to my master's arguments and expressions, which must needs suffer by my want of capacity, as well as by a translation into our barbarous English.

In obedience, therefore, to his Honour's commands, I related to him the *revolution* under the Prince of Orange; the long war with France entered into by the said Prince, and renewed by his successor the present Queen, wherein the greatest power of Christendom were engaged, and which still continued: I computed, at his request, that about a million of *Yahoos* might have been killed in the whole progress of it; and perhaps a hundred or more cities taken, and five times as many ships burnt or sunk.

He asked me, what were the usual causes or motives that made one country go to war with another? I answered, they were innumerable; but I should only mention a few of the chief. Sometimes the ambition of princes, who never think they have land or people enough to govern. Sometimes the corruption of ministers, who engage their master in a war, in order to stifle or divert the clamour of the subjects against their evil administration. Difference in opinions hath cost many millions of lives. For instance, whether *flesh* be *bread*, or *bread* be *flesh*; whether the juice of a certain *berry* be *blood* or *wine*; whether *whistling* be a vice or a virtue; whether it be better to *kiss a post*, or throw it into the fire; what is the best colour for a *coat*, whether *black*, *white*, *red*, or *grey*; and whether it should be *long* or *short*, *narrow* or *wide*, *dirty* or *clean*, with many more. Neither are any wars so furious and bloody, or of so long continuance, as those occasioned by difference in opinion, especially if it be in things indifferent.

Sometimes the quarrel between two princes is to decide,

side, which of them shall dispossess a third of his dominions, where neither of them pretend to any right. Sometimes one prince quarrelleth with another, for fear the other should quarrel with him. Sometimes a war is entered upon, because one enemy is too *strong*; and sometimes because he is too *weak*. Sometimes our neighbours want the things which we *have*, or have the things which we *want*; and we both fight, till they take ours, or we give us theirs. It is a very justifiable cause of a war, to invade a country after the people have been afflicted by famine, destroyed by pestilence, or embroiled by factions among themselves. It is justifiable to enter into a war against our nearest ally, when one of his towns lies convenient for us, or a territory of land that would render our dominions more united and compact. If a prince sends forces into a nation where the people are poor and ignorant, he may lawfully put half of them to death, and make slaves of the rest, in order to civilize and reduce them from their barbarous way of living. It is a very kingly, honourable, and frequent practice, when one prince desires the assistance of another to disfigure him against an invasion, that the assistant, when he had driven out the invader, should seize the dominions himself, and kill, imprison, or do with the prince he came to relieve. Alliance by blood or marriage is a frequent cause of war between princes; and the nearer the kindred is, the greater is their disposition to quarrel: *poor* nations are *hungry*, and *rich* nations are *proud*; and pride and hunger will ever be at variance. For these reasons, the trade of a *soldier* is held the most honourable of all others; because a *soldier* is a *Tahoo* inclined to kill in cold blood as many of his own species, who have never offended him, as possibly he

There

There is likewise a kind of beggarly princes in Europe, not able to make war by themselves, who hire out their troops to richer nations, for so much a day to each man; of which they keep three-fourths to themselves, and it is the best part of their maintenance; such are those in many northern parts of Europe.

What you have told me (said my master) upon the subject of war, does indeed discover most admirably the effects of that reason you pretend to. However it is happy that the *shame* is greater than the *danger*; and that nature has left you utterly incapable of doing much mischief. For, your mouths lying flat with your faces, you can hardly bite each other to any purpose, unless by consent. Then as to the claws upon your feet before and behind, they are so short and so tender, that one of our *Rahoes* would drive a dozen of yours before him. And therefore, in recounting the numbers of those who have been killed in battle, I cannot but think you have *said the thing which is not*.

I could not forbear shaking my head, and smiling a little at his ignorance. And being no stranger to the art of war, I gave him a description of cannons, culverins, musquets, carabines, pistols, bullets, powder, swords, bayonets, battles, sieges, retreats, attacks, undermines, countermines, bombardments, sea-fights, ships sunk with a thousand men, twenty thousand killed on each side, dying groans, limbs flying in the air, smoke, noise, confusion, trampling to death under horses feet; flight, pursuit, victory; fields strewed with carcases left for food to dogs, and wolves, and birds of prey; plundering, stripping, ravishing, burning and destroying. And to set forth the valour of my own dear countrymen, I assured him, that I had seen them blow up an hundred enemies at once in a siege,

and as many in a ship; and beheld dead bodies drop down in pieces from the clouds, to the diversion of the spectators.

I was going on to more particulars, when my superior commanded me silence. He said, whoever understood the nature of *Tahoos*, might easily believe it possible for so vile an animal to be capable of every action I had named, if their strength and cunning equalled their malice. But as my discourse increased his abhorrence of the whole species, he found it gave him a disturbance in his mind, which he was wholly a stranger before. He thought his ears, being used to such abominable actions, might by degrees admit them with less detestation. That although he hated the *Tahoos* of this country, yet he no more blamed them for their qualities, than he did a *Onnayh* (a bird of prey) for its cruelty, or a sharp stone for cutting the hoof. But when a creature pretending to reason could be capable of such enormities, he dreaded lest the corruption of that faculty might be more than brutality itself. He seemed therefore content, that instead of reason, we were only possessed of some quality fitted to increase our natural vices; as the reflection from a troubled stream returns the image of an ill shapen body, not only uglier, but more distorted.

He added, that he had heard too much upon the subject of war, both in this and some former discourses. There was another point, which a little perplexed him at present. I had informed him, that some of our crew left their country on account of being ruined by law; that I had already explained the meaning of the word: But he was at a loss how it should come to pass, that the law, which was intended for every man's preservation, should be any man's ruin. Therefore he desired to be farther

ther satisfied what I meant by *law* and the *disposers* thereof, according to the present practice in our own country: Because he thought *nature* and *reason* were sufficient guides for a reasonable animal, we pretended to be, in shewing us what we ought to do, and what to avoid.

I assured his Honour, that *law* was a science which I had not much conversed, further than in employing advocates in vain upon some injustice, that had been done to me; however, I would give him all the satisfaction I was able.

I said, there was a society of men among us bred up from their youth in the art of proving, words multiplied for the purpose, that *white* is *black*, and *black* is *white*, according as they are paid. To this society all the rest of the people are slaves. For example, if my neighbour hath wronged my *cow*, he hires a *lawyer* to prove that he ought to have my *cow* from me. I must then hire another to defend my right, it being against all rules of *law*, that any man should be allowed to speak for himself. Now in this case, I, who am the right owner, lie under two great disadvantages; *first*, my *lawyer*, being practised almost from his cradle in defending falsehood, is quite out of his element where he would be an advocate for justice, which is an unnatural office, he always attempts with great awkwardness, if not with ill will. The *second* disadvantage is, that my *lawyer* must proceed with great caution, or else he will be reprimanded by the *judges*, and abhorred by his brethren as one that would lessen the practice of the *law*. And therefore I have but two methods to preserve my *cow*. The first is, to gain over my adversary *lawyer* with a double fee; who will then betray his client, by insinuating, that he hath justice on his side. The second way is, for my *lawyer*

my cause appear as *unjust* as he can, by alleging the *cow* to belong to my adversary ; and if it be skilfully done, will certainly bespeak favour of the bench. Now, your Honour is to know, that these *judges* are persons appointed to decide all controversies of property, as well as for trial of criminals, and picked out from the most dextrous lawyers who are grown old or lazy ; having been biased all their lives against truth and equity, lie under such a fatal necessity of favouring fraud, perjury, and oppression, that I have known some of them refuse a large bribe from the place where justice lay, rather than injure the Faculty by doing any thing unbecomming their nature and their office.

It is a maxim among these lawyers, that whatever hath been done before, may legally be done again ; and therefore, they take special care to record all the decisions formerly made against common justice, and the general reason of mankind. These, under the name of *precedents*, they produce as authorities to justify the most iniquitous opinions, and the judges never fail of directing accordingly.

In pleading, they studiously avoid entering into the *merits* of the cause ; but are loud, violent, and malicious, in dwelling upon all *circumstances* which are not to the purpose. For instance, in the case already mentioned ; they never desire to know what claim or title my adversary hath to my *cow* ; but whether the said *cow* were red, or black ; her horns long or short ; whether the field I graze her in be round or square ; whether she was milked at home or abroad ; what diseases she is subject to, and the like ; after which they consult *precedents*, adjourn the cause from time to time, and in ten, twenty, or thirty years, come to an issue.

It

It is likewise to be observed, that this society hath a peculiar cant and jargon of their own, that no other mortal can understand, and wherein all their laws are written, which they take special care to multiply; whereby they have wholly confounded the very essence of truth and falsehood, of right and wrong; so that it will take thirty years to decide, whether the field left me by my ancestors for six generations, belongs to me, or to a stranger three hundred miles off.

In the trial of persons accused for crimes against the state, the method is much more short and commendable: The judge first sends to sound the disposition of those in power, after which he can easily hang or save a criminal, strictly preserving all due forms of *law*.

Here my master, interposing, said, it was a pity that creatures endued with such prodigious abilities of mind, as these *lawyers* by the description gave of them must certainly be, were not rather encouraged to be instructors of others in wisdom and knowledge. In answer to which I assured his Honour, that in all points out of their own trade they were usually the most ignorant and stupid generation among us, the most despicable in common conversation; avowed enemies to all knowledge and learning, and equally disposed to pervert the general reason of mankind in every other subject of discourse, as in that of their own profession.

C H A P. VI.

continuation of the state of England under Queen Anne. The character of a first minister of state in European courts.

MY master was yet wholly at a loss to understand what motives could incite this race of *Yahoos*, to perplex, disquiet, and weary themselves, to engage in a confederacy of injustice, merely for the sake of injuring their fellow animals; neither could he comprehend what I meant in saying they did it for *hire*. Whereupon I was at much pains to describe to him the use of *money*, the materials it was made of, and the value of the metals: that when a *Yahoo* had got a great store of this precious substance, he was able to purchase whatever he had a mind to; the finest cloathing, the noblest houses, great tracts of land, the most costly meats and drinks, and have his choice of the most beautiful females. Therefore, since *money* alone was able to perform all these feats, our *Yahoos* thought they could never have enough of it to spend, or to save, they found themselves inclined from their natural bent either to profusion or avarice: That the rich man enjoyed the fruit of the poor man's labour, and the latter were a thousand to one in proportion to the former: That the bulk of our people were forced to live miserably, by labouring every day for small wages, to make a few live plentifully. I enlarged myself much on these, and many other particulars to the same purpose: But his Honour was still to seek; for he went upon a supposition, that all animals had a title to their share in the productions of the earth, and especially those who

presided over the rest. Therefore he desired I would let him know, what these costly meats were, and how any of us happened to want them. Whereupon I enumerated as many sorts as came into my head, with the various methods of dressing them, which could not be done without sending vessels by sea to every part of the world, as well for liquors to drink, as for sauces, and innumerable other conveniences. I assured him, that this whole globe of earth must be at least three times gone round, before one of our better female *Yahoos* could get her breakfast, or a cup to put it in. He said, that must needs be a miserable country which cannot furnish food for its own inhabitants. But what he chiefly wondered at was, how such vast tracts of ground, as I described, should be wholly without *fresh water*, and the people put to the necessity of sending over the sea for drink. I replied, that England (the dear place of my nativity) was computed to produce three times the quantity of food more than its inhabitants are able to consume, as well as liquors extracted from grain, or pressed out of the fruits of certain trees, which made excellent drink; and the same proportion in every other convenience of life. But in order to feed the luxury and intemperance of the males, and the vanity of females, we sent away the greatest part of our necessary things to other countries; from whence we in return brought the materials of diseases, folly, and vice, to spend among ourselves. Hence it follows of necessity, that vast numbers of our people are compelled to seek their livelihood by begging, robbing, stealing, cheating, pimping, flattering, flattery, forswearing, forging, gaming, lying, fawning, hectoring, voting, scribbling, star-gazing, poisoning, whoring, canting, libeling, free-thinking, and the like occupations:

Every

A

every one
ke him u
That wi
an count
er drinks
de us m
rted all n
gant ima
d banithe
for a tim
we fell
confesse
; and t
ses, whic
But besif
rted the
venience
or instan
ought to
an hund
re of my
mes the
I was g
ople, w
k, havi
onour th
s. But
brought
ould eas
eak and
me accio
who work
ains to h
ble, and
ountable
and thin
er: Th

every one of which terms I was at much pains to make him understand.

That *wine* was not imported among us from foreign countries to supply the want of water, or other drinks, but because it was a sort of liquid which made us merry by putting us out of our senses, diverted all melancholy thoughts, begat wild extravagant imaginations in the brain, raised our hopes, banished our fears; suspended every office of reason for a time, and deprived us of the use of our limbs, we fell into a profound sleep; although it must be confessed, that we always awaked sick and dispirited; and that the use of this liquor filled us with diseases, which made our lives uncomfortable and short. But beside all this, the bulk of our people supported themselves by furnishing the necessities or conveniences of life to the rich, and to each other. For instance, when I am at home, and dressed as ought to be, I carry on my body the workmanship of an hundred tradesmen; the building and furniture of my house employ as many more, and five times the number to adorn my wife.

I was going on to tell him of another sort of people, who get their livelihood by attending the sick, having upon some occasions informed his honour that many of my crew had died of diseases. But here it was with the utmost difficulty that I brought him to apprehend what I meant. He could easily conceive, that a Houyhnhnm grew weak and heavy a few days before his death, or by some accident might hurt a limb; but that nature, who works all things to perfection, should suffer any pains to breed in our bodies, he thought it impossible, and desired to know the reason of so unaccountable an evil. I told him, we fed on a thousand things, which operated contrary to each other: That we eat them when we were not hun-

gry, and drank without the provocation of thirst. That we sat whole nights drinking strong liquors without eating a bit, which disposed us to sloth, enflamed our bodies, and precipitated or prevented digestion: That prostitute female *Yahoos* acquired a certain malady, which bred rottenness in the bones of those who fell into their embraces: That this and many other diseases were propagated from father to son; so that great numbers come into the world with complicated maladies upon them: That it would be endless to give him a catalogue of all diseases incident to human bodies; for they could not be fewer than five or six hundred spread over every limb and joint; in short, every part, external and intestine, having diseases appropriated to itself. To remedy which, there was a sort of people bred up among us in the profession, or pretence, of curing the sick. And because I had some skill in the Faculty, I would, in gratitude to his Honour, let him know the whole mystery and method by which they proceed.

Their fundamental is, that all diseases arise from *repletion*; from whence they conclude, that a great *evacuation* of the body is necessary, either through the natural passage, or upwards at their mouth. The next business is, from herbs, minerals, gums, oils, shells, salts, juices, sea-weed, excrements, barks of trees, serpents, toads, frogs, spiders, dead men's flesh and bones, birds, beasts, and fishes, to form a composition for smell and taste the most abominable, nauseous, and detestable, they can possibly contrive, which the stomach immediately reject, with loathing; and this they call a *vomit*: Or else, from the same store-house with some other poisonous additions, they command us to take in at the orifice, *above* or *below*, (just as the physician then happens to be disposed) a medicine equally annoying and disgusting

to

A

the bo
own all b
ffer. F
intende
e introm
posterior
considering
her seat
must be tr
interchang
and liquid
the mo
But bes
that are
we inven
veral na
er for the
ways inf
One gr
prognost
itions in
malign
ways in
erefore,
er they
an be a
approve
le dose.
They a
ives, wh
deft sons
inces.
I had fo
after up
ad partic
vedly t
ut havin

the bowels ; which, relaxing the belly, drives down all before it ; and this they call a *purge* or a *hyfter*. For nature (as the physicians alledge) hath intended the superior anterior orifice only for the *intromiffion* of folids and liquids, and the inferior posterior for ejection ; these artists ingeniously confidering that in all difeafes nature is forced out of her feat, therefore to replace her in it, the body muft be treated in a manner directly contrary, by interchanging the ufe of each orifice ; forcing folids and liquids in at the *anus*, and making evacuations at the mouth.

But besides real difeafes, we are fubject to many that are only imaginary, for which the physicians have invented imaginary cures. These have their feveral names, and fo have the drugs that are proper for them ; and with these our female *Yahoos* are always infested.

One great excellency in this tribe is their skill in *prognostics*, wherein they feldom fail ; their predictions in real difeafes, when they rife to any degree of malignity, generally portending *death*, which is always in their power, when recovery is not : And therefore, upon any unexpected figns of amendment after they have pronounced their fentence, rather than be accused as falfe prophets, they know how to approve their fagacity to the world by a feafonable dofe.

They are likewise of fpecial ufe to husbands and wives, who are grown weary of their mates ; to the eldeft fons, to great minifters of ftate, and often to the princes.

I had formerly, upon occafion, difcourfed with my matter upon the nature of *government* in general, and particularly of our own *excellent conftitution*, defcribing the wonder and envy of the whole world. But having here accidentally mentioned a *minifter*

of state, he commanded me, some time after, to inform him what species of *Tahoo* I particularly meant by that appellation.

I told him, that a first or chief minister of state who was the person I intended to describe, was a creature wholly exempt from joy and grief, love and hatred, pity and anger; at least, makes use of no other passions, but a violent desire of wealth, power, and titles; that he applies his words to all uses, except to the indication of his mind; that he never tells a *truth*, but with an intent that you should take it for a *lie*; nor a *lie*, but with a design that you should take it for a *truth*: That those who speak worst of behind their backs are in the sure way of preferment; and whenever he begins to praise you to others, or to yourself, you are from that day forlorn. The worst mark you can receive is a *promise*, especially when it is confirmed with an oath; after which every wise man retires, and gives over all hopes.

There are three methods, by which a man may rise to be chief minister. The first is, by knowing how with prudence to dispose of a wife, a daughter or a sister: The second, by betraying or undermining his predecessor: And the third is, by a *furious zeal*, in public assemblies, against the corruptions of the court. But a wise prince would rather choose to employ those, who practise the last of these methods; because such zealots prove always the most obsequious and subservient to the will and passions of their masters. That these *ministers*, having great employments at their disposal, preserve themselves in power, by bribing the majority of a senate or great council; and at last, by an expedient called an *act of indemnity*, (whereof I described the nature to him) they secure themselves from after-remonstrances, and retire from the public, laden with the spoils of the nation.

The palace of a *chief minister* is a seminary to breed up others in his own trade: The pages, lacies, and porter, by imitating their master, become *ministers of state* in their several districts, and learn to excel in the three principal *ingredients*, of *obedience, lying, and bribery*. Accordingly they have a *subaltern court* paid to them by persons of the same rank; and sometimes, by the force of dexterity and impudence, arrive through several gradations to be successors to their lord.

He is usually governed by a decayed wench, or favourite footman, who are the funnels through which all graces are conveyed, and may properly be called, *in the last resort*, the governors of the kingdom. One day in discourse, my master having heard me mention the *nobility* of my country, was pleased to make me a compliment, which I could not pretend to deserve: That he was sure, I must have been born of some noble family, because I far exceeded in shape, colour, and cleanliness, all the *ahoos* of his nation, although I seemed to fail in strength and agility, which must be imputed to my different way of living from those other brutes; and besides, I was not only endued with the faculty of speech, but likewise with some rudiments of reason, to a degree that with all his acquaintance I was called for a prodigy.

He made me observe, that among the Houyhnhnms, the *white*, the *forrel*, and the *iron-grey*, were not so exactly shaped as the *bay*, the *dapple-grey*, and the *black*; nor born with equal talents of mind, or a capacity to improve them; and therefore continued always in the condition of servants, without ever aspiring to match out of their own race, which in that country would be reckoned monstrous and unnatural.

I made his Honour my most humble acknowledgment.

ledgements for the good opinion he was pleased
 to conceive of me; but assured him at the same
 time, that my birth was of the lower sort, having
 been born of plain honest parents, who were ju-
 able to give me a tolerable education; that nobility
 among us was altogether a different thing from
 the idea he had of it; that our young noblemen
 are bred from their childhood in idleness and lux-
 ury; that, as soon as years will permit, they con-
 sume their vigour, and contract odious diseases
 among lewd females; and when their fortunes are
 almost ruined, they marry some woman of mean
 birth, disagreeable person, and unsound constitu-
 tion, merely for the sake of money, whom they hate
 and despise: That the production of such mar-
 riages are generally scrophulous, rickety, or de-
 formed children; by which means the family se-
 dom continues above three generations, unless the
 wife takes care to provide a healthy father among
 her neighbours or domestics, in order to improve
 and continue the breed: That a weak diseased bo-
 dy, a meagre countenance, and fallow complexion,
 are the true marks of *noble blood*; and a healthy ro-
 bust appearance is so disgraceful in a man of quali-
 ty, that the world concludes his real father to have
 been a *groom*, or a *coachman*. The imperfections
 of his mind run parallel with those of his body, be-
 ing a composition of spleen, dulness, ignorance,
 caprice, sensuality, and pride.

Without this consent of the illustrious body, no
 law can be enacted, repealed, or altered; and these
nobles have likewise the decisions of all our posses-
 sions, without appeal.

C H A P.

C H A P VII.

author's great love of his native country. His master's observations upon the constitution and administration of Engalnd, as described by the author, with parallel cases and comparisons. His master's observations upon human nature.

THE reader may be disposed to wonder, how I could prevail on myself to give so free a representation of my own species, among a race of savages who are already too apt to conceive the most pernicious opinion of human-kind, from that entire discontinuity betwixt me and their *Yahoos*. But I feel myself freely confess, that the many virtues of those excellent *Quadrupeds*, placed in opposite view to our human corruptions, had so far opened my eyes, and enlarged my understanding, that I began to view the actions and passions of man in a very different light; and to think the honour of my own kind not worth managing; which besides it was impossible for me to do, before a person of so acute a judgment as my master, who daily convinced me of a thousand faults in myself, whereof I had not the least perception before, and which with us would never be numbered even among human infirmities. I had likewise learned, from his example, an utter detestation of all falshood or disguise; and truth appeared so amiable to me, that I determined upon sacrificing every thing to it.

Let me deal so candidly with the reader, as to confess, that there was yet a much stronger motive to the freedom I took in my representation of things. I had not been a year in this country, before

fore I contracted such a love and veneration for the inhabitants, that I entered on a firm resolution never to return to human-kind, but to pass the rest of my life among these admirable Houyhnhnms, in the contemplation and practice of every virtue where I could have no example or incitements to vice. But it was decreed by fortune, my perpetual enemy, that so great a felicity should not fall to my share. However, it is now some comfort to reflect, that in what I said of my countrymen, I extenuated their faults as much as I durst before so strict an examiner; and upon every article gave as favourable a turn as the matter would bear. For indeed who is there alive that will not be swayed by his bias and partiality to the place of his birth.

I have related the substance of several conversations I had with my Master during the greatest part of the time I had the honour to be in his service; but have indeed, for brevity's sake, omitted much more than is here set down.

When I had answered all his questions, and his curiosity seemed to be fully satisfied; he sent for me one morning early, and commanding me to sit down at some distance (an honour which he had never before conferred upon me,) he said, he had been very seriously considering my whole story, as far as it related both to myself and my country. That he looked upon us as a sort of animals, to whose share, by what accident he could not conjecture, some small pittance of *reason* had fallen, whereof we made no other use, than by its assistance to aggravate our *natural* corruptions, and to acquire new ones, which nature had given us: That we disarmed ourselves of the few abilities she had bestowed; had been very successful in multiplying our original wants, and seemed to spend our whole lives in vain endeavours to supply them by our

inventions : That as to myself, it was manifest neither the strength or agility of a common man ; that I walked infirmly on my hinder feet ; I found out a contrivance to make my claws of use or defence, and to remove the hair from my back, which was intended as a shelter from the sun and the weather. Lastly, that I could neither run with speed, nor climb trees like my brethren (as they called them) the *Yahoos* in this country.

That our institutions of government and law were plainly owing to our gross defects in reason, and by consequence in virtue ; because reason alone was insufficient to govern a rational creature ; which was therefore a character we had no pretence to challenge, even from the account I had given of our own people : Although he manifestly perceived that in order to favour them, I had concealed many particulars, and often said the thing which was

He was the more confirmed in his opinion, because he observed, that as I agreed in every feature of my body with other *Yahoos*, except where it was my real disadvantage, in point of strength, speed, and activity, the shortness of my claws, and some other particulars where nature had no part ; so in the representation I had given him of our manners, and our actions, he found as great a resemblance in the disposition of our minds. He said the *Yahoos* were known to hate one another more than they did any different species of animals ; and the reason usually assigned was the jealousy of their own shapes, which all could see in the rest, but not in themselves. He had therefore begun to think it not unwise in us to cover our bodies, and by that invention conceal many of our deformities from each other, which would else have been hardly supportable. But he now found he had been

been mistaken, and that the dissensions of those brutes in his country, were owing to the same cause with ours, as I had described them. For (said he) you throw among five *Yahoos* as much food, as would be sufficient for fifty, they will instead of eating peaceably, fall together by the ears; each single one impatient to have all to itself; and therefore a servant was usually employed to stand by while they were feeding abroad, and those kept at home were tied at a distance from each other, that if a cow died of age or accident, before the *Houyhnhnm* could secure it for his own *Yahoo*, those in the neighbourhood would come in herds to seize it, and then would ensue such a battle as I had described, with terrible wounds made by their claws on both sides, although they seldom were able to kill one another, for want of such convenient instruments of death as we have invented. At other times, the like battles have been fought between the *Yahoos* of several neighbourhoods, without any visible cause: those of one district watching all opportunities to surprise the next, before they are prepared. But if they find their project hath miscarried, they return home, and, for want of enemies, engage in what I call a civil war among themselves.

That in some fields of his country, there are certain *shining stones* of several colours, where the *Yahoos* are violently fond; and when part of these *stones* is fixed in the earth, as it sometimes happeneth, they will dig with their claws for whole days to get them out; then carry them away, and hide them by heaps in their kennels; but still looking round with great caution, for fear their comrades should find out their treasure. My master said he could never discover the reason of this unnatural appetite, or how these *stones* could be of any

use to a *Yahoo*; but now he believed it might proceed from the same principle of *avarice*, which was ascribed to mankind: That he had once, by way of experiment, privately removed a heap of *shining stones* from the place where one of his *Yahoos* buried it: Whereupon the sordid animal, missing his treasure, by his loud lamenting, brought the whole herd to the place, there miserably howled, then fell to biting and tearing the rest; began to pine away, would neither eat, nor sleep, nor rest, till he ordered a servant privately to convey the *stones* into the same hole, and hide them as before; which when his *Yahoo* had found, he presently recovered his spirits and good humour, but took care to remove them to a better hiding place, and hath ever since been a very serviceable brute. My master farther assured me, which I also observed myself, that in the fields where *shining stones* abound, the fiercest and most frequent battles are fought, occasioned by perpetual inroads of the neighbouring *Yahoos*. He said, it was common, when two *Yahoos* discovered such a *stone* in a field, and were contending which of them should be the proprietor, a third would take the advantage, and carry it away from them; which my master would needs contend to be some kind of resemblance with our *suits at law*; wherein I thought it for our credit not to deceive him, since the decision he mentioned was much more equitable than many decrees among us; because the plaintiff and the defendant there lost nothing beside the *stone* they contended for, whereas in our courts of equity would never have dismissed the cause, while either of them had any thing left. My master continuing his discourse, said, there was nothing that rendered the *Yahoos* more odious, than their undistinguishing appetite to devour

every thing that came in their way, whether herbs, roots, berries, the corrupted flesh of animals, or all mingled together : And it was peculiar in their temper, that they were fonder of what they could get by rapine or stealth at a greater distance, than much better food provided for them at home. If their prey held out, they would eat till they were ready to burst, after which nature had pointed out to them a certain *root* that gave them a general evacuation.

There was also another kind of *root*, very juicy but somewhat rare and difficult to be found, which the *Yahoos* sought for with much eagerness, and would suck it with great delight ; it produced in them the same effects that wine hath upon us. It would make them sometimes hug, and sometimes tear one another ; they would howl and grin, and chatter, and reel, and tumble, and then fall asleep in the mud.

I did indeed observe, that the *Yahoos* were the only animals in this country subject to any diseases ; which, however, were much fewer than horses have among us, and contracted, not by any ill treatment they meet with, but by the nastiness and greediness of that sordid brute. Neither has their language any more than a general appellation for those maladies, which is borrowed from the name of the beast, and called *hnea yahoo*, or the *Yahoo's evil* ; and the cure prescribed is a mixture of *their own dung* and *urine*, forcibly put down the *Yahoo's* throat. This I have since often known to have been taken with success, and do here freely recommend it to my countrymen, for the public good, as an admirable specific against all diseases produced by a repletion.

As to learning, government, arts, manufactures, and the like, my master confessed he could find little

or no resemblance between the *Yahoos* of that country and those in ours. For he only meant to serve, what parity there was in our natures. He heard indeed some curious Houyhnhnms observe, that in most herds there was a sort of ruling *Yahoo* among us there is generally some leading or principal stag in a park) who was always more determined in body, and *mischievous in disposition*, than any of the rest: That this leader had usually a favourite, as *like himself* as he could get, whose employment was to *lick his master's feet and posterior, and drive the female Yahoos to his kennel*; for which he was now and then rewarded with a piece of his master's flesh. This favourite is hated by the whole herd, and therefore, to protect himself, keeps always near the person of his leader. He usually continues in office till a worse can be found; but the very moment he is discarded, his successor, at the head of the *Yahoos* in that district, young and old, male and female, come in a body, and discharge their excrements upon him from head to foot. But how far this might be applicable to our courts, and favourites, and ministers of state, my master said I could best determine.

I durst make no return to this malicious insinuation, which debased human understanding below the sagacity of a common *hound*, who hath judgment enough to distinguish and follow the cry of the *blest dog in the pack*, without being ever mistaken. My master told me there were some qualities remarkable in the *Yahoos*, which he had not observed me to mention, or at least very slightly, in the accounts I had given him of human-kind. He said those animals, like other brutes, had their females in common; but in this they differed, that the *Yahoo* would admit the male while she was pregnant; and that the hees would quarrel and

fight with the females, as with each other. Both which practices were such degrees of infamy, if the brutality, as no other sensitive creature ever arrived at, I was

Another thing he wondered at in the *Yahoos* was their strange disposition to nastiness and dirt, whereas there appears to be a natural love of cleanliness in all other animals. As to the two former accusations, I was glad to let them pass without any reply, because I had not a word to offer upon them in defence of my species, which otherwise certainly had done from my own inclination. But I could have easily vindicated human-kind from the imputation of singularity upon the last article, if there had been any *swine* in that country (as unluckily for me there were not) which although it may be a *sweeter quadruped* than a *Yahoo*, cannot, I humbly conceive, in justice pretend to more cleanliness; and so his Honour himself must have owned, if he had seen their filthy way of feeding and their custom of wallowing and sleeping in the mud.

My master likewise mentioned another quality which his servants had discovered in several *Yahoos*, and to him was wholly unaccountable. He said, fancy would sometimes take a *Yahoo* to retire into a corner, to lie down, and howl and groan, and spurn away all that came near him, although he were young and fat, wanted neither food nor water, nor did the servants imagine what could possibly ail him. And the only remedy they found was, to set him to hard work, after which he would infallibly come to himself. To this I was silent out of partiality to my own kind; yet here I could plainly discover the true seeds of the *spleen*, which only seizeth on the *lazy*, the *luxurious*, and the *rich*.

Both, if they were forced to undergo the *same* regimen, I would undertake for the cure.

His Honour had farther observed, that a female *Yahoo* would often stand behind a bank or a bush, direct gaze on the young males passing by, and then clear appear, and hide, using many antic gestures and grimaces, at which time it was observed that she threw a most *offensive smell*; and when any of the males advanced, would slowly retire, looking often wise ask, and with a counterfeit shew of fear, run off to some convenient place, where she knew the male would follow her.

At other times, if a female stranger came among them, three or four of her own sex would get about her, and stare, and chatter, and grin, and call her all over; and then turn off with gestures, most seemed to express contempt and disdain.

Perhaps my master might refine a little in these speculations which he had drawn from what he observed himself, or had been told him by others: however, I could not reflect without some amazement, and much sorrow, that the rudiments of *lewdness, coquetry, censure, and scandal*, should have been by instinct in woman-kind.

I expected every moment, that my master would accuse the *Yahoos* of those unnatural appetites in both sexes, so common among us. But nature, it seems, hath not been so expert a school-mistress; and these politer pleasures are entirely the productions of art and reason on our side of the globe.

C H A P. VIII.

The author relates several particulars of the Yahoos: How they are bred, and the great virtues of the Houghnhnms. The education and exercise of their youth. Their general assembly.

AS I ought to have understood human nature much better than I supposed it possible for my master to do, so it was easy to apply the character he gave of the *Yahoos* to myself and my countrymen, and I believed I could yet make farther discoveries from my own observation. I therefore often begged his Honour to let me go among the herds of the *Yahoos* in the neighbourhood, to which he always very graciously consented, being perfectly convinced, that the hatred I bore those brutes would never suffer me to be corrupted by them; and his Honour ordered one of his servants, a strong sorrel nag, very honest and good-natured, to be my guard, without whose protection I durst not undertake such adventures. For I have already told the reader, how much I was pestered by those odious animals upon my first arrival. And I afterwards failed very narrowly three or four times of falling into their clutches, when I happened to stray at any distance without my hanger. And I have reason to believe they had some imagination that I was of their own species, which I often assisted myself by stripping up my sleeves, and shewing my naked arms and breasts in their sight, whenever my protector was with me. At which times they would approach as near as they durst, and imitate my actions after the manner of monkeys, but even with great signs of hatred; as a tame *jack-daw* with

with cap and stocking is always persecuted by the wild ones when he happens to be got among them.

They are prodigiously nimble from their infancy: However, I once caught a young male of three years old, and endeavoured by all marks of tenderness to make it quiet; but the little imp fell a qualling, and scratching, and biting with such violence, that I was forced to let it go; and it was a high time, for a whole troop of old ones came about us at the noise; but finding the cub was safe, (for away it ran), and my sorrel nag being by, they durst not venture near us. I observed the young animal's flesh to smell very rank, and the stink was somewhat between a *weasel* and a *fox*, that much more disagreeable. I forgot another circumstance (and perhaps I might have the reader's pardon if it were wholly omitted) that while I held the odious vermin in my hands, it voided its filthy excrements, of a yellow liquid substance, all over my cloaths; but by good fortune there was a small brook hard by, where I washed myself as clean as I could; although I durst not come into my master's presence until I were sufficiently aired. By what I could discover, the *Tahoes* appear to be the most unteachable of all animals: their capacities never reaching higher than to draw or carry burdens. Yet I am of opinion, this defect ariseth chiefly from a perverse, restive disposition. For they are cunning, malicious, treacherous, and revengeful. They are strong and hardy, but of a cowardly spirit, and by consequence insolent, abject, and cruel. It is observed, that the *red-haired* of both sexes are more libidinous and mischievous than the rest, whom yet they much exceed in strength and activity.

Houyhnhnms keep the *Tahoes* for present use, in huts

huts not far from the house ; but the rest are sent abroad to certain fields, where they dig up roots, eat several kinds of herbs, and search about for carrion, or sometimes catch *weasels* and *luhimuh* (a sort of *wild rat*) which they greedily devour. Nature hath taught them to dig deep holes with their nails, on the side of a rising ground, wherein they lie by themselves : Only the kennels of the females are larger, sufficient to hold two or three cubs.

They swim from their infancy like frogs, and are able to continue long under water, where they often take fish, which the females carry home to their young. And, upon this occasion, I hope the reader will pardon my relating an odd adventure.

Being one day abroad with my protector, the sorrel nag, and the weather exceeding hot, I invited him to let me bathe in a river that was near. He consented, and I immediately stripped myself stark naked, and went down softly unto the stream. It happened that a young female *Tahoo* standing behind a bank, saw the whole proceeding, and, enflamed by desire, as the sorrel nag and I conjectured, came running with all speed, and leaped into the water within five yards of the place where I bathed. I was never in my life so terribly frightened ; the nag was grazing at some distance, and not suspecting any harm. She embraced me after a most fulsome manner : I roared as loud as I could, and the nag came galloping towards me : whereupon she quitted her grasp with the utmost reluctance, and leaped upon the opposite bank, where she stood gazing and howling all the time I was putting on my cloaths.

This was a matter of diversion to my master and his family, as well as mortification to myself. For now I could no longer deny that I was a real *Tahoo* in every limb and feature, since the female

and a natural propensity to me, as one of their own species : Neither was the hair of this brute of a red colour (which might have been some excuse for an appetite a little irregular) but black as a sloe, and her countenance did not make an appearance altogether so hideous as the rest of her kind : For I think she could not be above eleven years old.

Having lived three years in this country, the reader I suppose will expect that I should, like our travellers, give him some account of the manners and customs of its inhabitants, which it was indeed my principal study to learn.

As these noble Houyhnhnms are endowed by nature with a general disposition to all virtues, and have no conceptions or ideas of what is evil in a rational creature ; so their grand maxim is to cultivate *reason*, and to be wholly governed by it. There is neither *reason* among them a point problematical, as with us, where men can argue with plausibility on both sides of a question ; but strikes you with immediate conviction ; as it must needs do, where it is not mingled, obscured, or discoloured, by passion and interest. I remember it was with extreme difficulty, that I could bring my master to understand the meaning of the word *opinion*, or if I saw a point could be disputable ; because *reason* taught us to affirm or deny only where we are certain ; and beyond our knowledge we cannot do either. So that controversies, wranglings, disputes, and positiveness, in false or dubious propositions, with the evils unknown among the Houyhnhnms. In the opposite manner, when I used to explain to him our several systems of *natural philosophy*, he would laugh, that a creature pretending to *reason*, should value itself upon the knowledge of other people's conjectures, and in things where that knowledge, if it were certain, could be of no use. Wherein he agreed entirely

entirely with the sentiments of Socrates, as Plato delivers them; which I mention as the highest honour I can do to that prince of philosophers. I have often since reflected, what destruction such a doctrine would make in the libraries of Europe, and how many paths to fame would be then shut up in the learned world.

Friendship and *benevolence* are the two principal virtues among the Houyhnhnms; and these are not confined to particular objects, but universal to the whole race. For a stranger, from the remotest part, is equally treated with the nearest neighbour; and wherever he goes, looks upon himself as at home. They preserve *decency* and *civility* in the highest degrees, but are altogether ignorant of *ceremony*. They have no fondness for their colts or foals, but the care they take in educating them proceeds entirely from the dictates of *reason*. And I observed my master to shew the same affection to his neighbour's issue that he had for his own. They will have it, that *nature* teaches them to love the whole species; and it is *reason* only that maketh distinction of persons, where there is a superior degree of virtue.

When the matron Houyhnhnms have produced one of each sex, they no longer accompany with their consorts, except they lose one of their issue by some casualty, which very seldom happens: But in such a case they meet again; or when the like accident befalls a person whose wife is past bearing, some other couple bestow him one of their own colts, and then go together again until the mother is pregnant. This caution is necessary to prevent the country from being over-burthened with numbers. But the race of inferior Houyhnhnms, bred up to be servants, is not so strictly limited upon this article; these are allowed to produce three

of each sex to be domestics in the noble fami-

in their marriages they are exactly careful to
 use such colours as will not make any disagreea-
 mixture in the breed. *Strength* is chiefly valu-
 ed in the male, and *comeliness* in the female: Not
 on the account of *love*, but to preserve the race
 from degenerating; for where a female happens to
 excel in *strength*, a consort is chosen with regard
 to *comeliness*.

Courtships, love, presents, jointures, settlements,
 have no place in their thoughts, or terms where-
 to express them in their language. The young
 people meet, and are joined, merely because it is
 the determination of their parents and friends: It
 is what they see done every day, and they look u-
 pon it as one of the necessary actions of a reason-
 able being. But the violation of marriage, or any
 other unchastity, was never heard of: And the
 married pair pass their lives with the same friend-
 ship, and mutual benevolence, that they bear to
 others of the same species who come in their
 way; without jealousy, fondness, quarrelling, or
 discontent.

In educating the youth of both sexes, their me-
 thod is admirable, and highly deserveth our imita-
 tion. These are not suffered to taste a grain of *oats*,
 except upon certain days, till eighteen years old;
 but *milk*, but very rarely; and in summer they
 graze two hours in the morning, and as many in
 evening, which their parents likewise observe; but
 the servants are not allowed above half that time,
 and a great part of their grass is brought home,
 which they eat at the most convenient hours, when
 they can be best spared from work.

Temperance, industry, exercise, and cleanliness,
 are the lessons equally enjoined to the young ones
 of

of both sexes: And my master thought it monstrous in us to give the females a different kind of education from the males, except in some articles of domestic management; whereby, as he truly observed, one half of our natives were good for nothing but bringing children into the world: And to trust the care of our children to such useless animals, he said, was yet a greater instance of brutality.

But the Houyhnhnms train up their youth to strength, speed, and hardiness, by exercising them in running races up and down steep hills, and over hard stony grounds; and when they are all in a sweat, they are ordered to leap, over head and ears into a pond or river. Four times a year the youth of a certain district meet, to shew their proficiency in running and leaping, and other feats of strength and agility; where the victor is rewarded with a song in his or her praise. On this festival, the servants drive a herd of *Yahoos* into the field, laden with hay, and oats, and milk, for repast to the Houyhnhnms; after which these brutes are immediately driven back again, for fear of being noisome to the assembly.

Every fourth year, at the *vernal equinox*, there is a representative council of the whole nation, which meets in a plain about twenty miles from our house, and continueth about five or six days. Here they inquire into the state and condition of the several districts; whether they abound, or be deficient in hay or oats, or cows or *Yahoos*? And wherever there is any want (which is but seldom) it is immediately supplied by unanimous consent and contribution. Here likewise the regulation of children is settled: As for instance, if a Houyhnhnm hath two males, he changeth one of them with another that hath two females; and when a child hath been lost by any casualty, where the mother is past breeding

breeding, it is determined what family in the district
shall breed another to supply the loss,

C H A P. IX.

*grand debate at the general assembly of the Hou-
yhnhnms, and how it was determined. The learn-
ing of the Houyhnhnms. Their buildings. Their
manner of burials. The defectiveness of their lan-
guage.*

ONE of these grand assemblies was held in
my time, about three months before my de-
parture, whether my master went as the representa-
tive of our district. In this council was resumed
their old debate, and indeed the only debate that
ever happened in their country; whereof my mas-
ter, after his return, gave me a very particular ac-
count.

The question to be debated was, Whether the
Yahoos should be exterminated from the face of the
earth? One of the *members* for the affirmative of-
fered several arguments of strength and weight;
alleging, that as the *Yahoos* were the most filthy,
foul, and deformed animal which nature ever
produced, so they were the most restless and indo-
mitable, mischievous and malicious: They would pri-
vately suck the teats of the Houyhnhnms cows; kill
and devour their cats, trample down their oats and
grass, if they were not continually watched, and
commit a thousand other extravagancies. He took
notice of a general tradition, that *Yahoos* had not
been always in their country; but that, many ages
ago, two of these brutes appeared together upon a
mountain; whether produced by the heat of the sun,
or corrupted mud and slime, or from the ooze and
froth

froth of the sea, was never known : That these *Yahoos* engendered; and their brood in a short time grew so numerous as to over-run and infest the whole nation : That the Houyhnhnms, to get rid of this evil, made a general hunting, and at last inclosed the whole herd ; and destroying the elder, every Houyhnhnm kept two young ones in a kennel, and brought them to such a degree of tameness, as an animal so savage by nature can be capable of acquiring ; using them for draught and carriage : That there seemed to be much truth in this tradition, and that those creatures could not be *Ylnhniamshy* (or *Aborogines* of the land) because of the violent hatred the Houyhnhnms, as well as all other animals, bore them ; which, although their evil disposition sufficiently deserved, could never have arrived at so high a degree, if they had been *Aborogines* ; or else they would have long since been rooted out : That the inhabitants, taking a fancy to use the service of the *Yahoos*, had very imprudently neglected to cultivate the breed of *asses*, which are a comely animal, easily kept, more tame and orderly, without any offensive smell, strong enough for labour, although they yield to the other in agility of body ; and, if their braying be no agreeable sound, it is far preferable to the horrible howlings of the *Yahoos*.

Several others declared their sentiments to the same purpose, when my master proposed an expedient to the assembly, whereof he had indeed borrowed the hint from me. He approved of the tradition mentioned by the *honourable member* who spoke before ; and affirmed, that the two *Yahoos*, said to be first seen among them, had been driven thither over the sea : That coming to land, and being forsaken by their companions, they retired to the mountains, and, degenerating by degrees, became,

process of time, much more savage than those of their own species in the country from whence these originals came. The reason of this assertion was, that he had now in his possession a certain wonderful *Yahoo* (meaning myself) which most of them had heard of, and many of them had seen. He then related to them how he first found me: That my body was all covered with an artificial composition of the skins and hairs of other animals: That I spoke in a language of my own, and had thoroughly learned theirs: That I had related to them the accidents which brought me thither: That, when he saw me without my covering, I was an exact *Yahoo* in every part, only of a whiter colour, less hairy, and with shorter claws. He added, how he had endeavoured to persuade him, that, in my own and other countries, the *Yahoos* acted as the governing, rational animal, and held the Houyhnhnms in servitude: That he observed in me all the qualities of a *Yahoo*, only a little more civilized by some tincture of reason; which, however, was to a degree as far inferior to the Houyhnhnm race, as the *Yahoos* of their country were to me: That, among other things, I mentioned a custom we had, of *castrating* Houyhnhnms when they were young, in order to render them tame; that the operation was easy and safe; that it was no shame to learn wisdom from brutes, as industry is taught by the ant, and building by the swallow (for so I translate the word *lyhannb*, although it be a much larger fowl:;) That this invention might be practised upon the younger *Yahoos* here, which, besides rendering them tractable and fitter for use, would in age put an end to the whole species, without destroying life: That in the mean time the Houyhnhnms should be *exhorted* to cultivate the breed of asses, which as they are in all respects more valuable than brutes

brutes, so they have this advantage, to be fit for service at five years old, which the others are not till twelve.

This was all my master thought fit to tell me at that time, of what passed in the grand council. But he was pleased to conceal one particular, which related personally to myself, whereof I soon felt the unhappy effect, as the reader will know in its proper place, and from whence I date all the succeeding misfortunes of my life.

The Houyhnhnms have no letters, and consequently their knowledge is all traditional. But there happening few events of any moment among a people so well united, naturally disposed to every virtue, wholly governed by reason, and cut off from all commerce with other nations; the historical part is easily preserved without burthening their memories. I have already observed, that they are subject to no diseases, and therefore can have no need of physicians. However, they have excellent medicines, composed of herbs, to cure accidental bruises and cuts in the pastern or frog of the foot by the sharp stones, as well as other maims and hurts in the several parts of the body.

They calculate the year by the revolution of the sun and the moon, but use no subdivisions into weeks. They are well enough acquainted with the motions of those two luminaries, and understand the nature of *eclipses*: and this is the utmost progress of their *astronomy*.

In *poetry* they must be allowed to excel all other mortals; wherein the justness of their similes, and the minuteness as well as exactness of their descriptions, are indeed inimitable. Their verses abound very much in both of these; and usually contain either some exalted notions of friendship and benevolence, or the praises of those who were victors

... races and other bodily exercises. Their buildings, although very rude and simple, are not inconvenient, but well contrived to defend them from all injuries of cold and heat. They have a kind of tree, which at forty years old loosens in the pot, and falls with the first storm; it grows very straight, and being pointed like stakes, with a sharp stone (for the Houyhnhnms know not the use of iron) they stick them erect in the ground about ten paces asunder, and then weave it in oat straw, or sometimes wattles betwixt them. The roof is made after the same manner, and so are the doors.

The Houyhnhnms use the hollow part, between the pastern and the hoof, of their fore-feet, as we do our hands, and this with greater dexterity than we could at first imagine. I have seen a white mare of our family thread a needle (which I lent her on purpose) with that joint. They milk their cows, reap their oats, and do all the work which requires hands in the same manner. They have a kind of hard flints, which, by grinding against their stones, they form into instruments, that serve instead of wedges, axes, and hammers. With tools made of these flints, they likewise cut their hay and reap their oats, which there grow naturally in several fields. The *Yahoos* draw home the shaves in carriages, and the servants tread them in certain covered huts to get out the grain, which is kept in stores. They make a rude kind of earthen and wooden vessels, and bake the former in the sun.

If they can avoid casualties, they die only of old age, and are buried in the obscurest places that can be found, their friends and relations expressing neither joy nor grief at their departure; nor does the dying person discover the least regret that he is leaving the world, any more than if he were upon returning home from a visit to one of his neighbours.

hours. I remember my master having once made an appointment with a friend and his family to come to his house upon some affairs of importance, on the day fixed the mistress and her two children came very late. She made two excuses, first for her husband, who, as she said, happened that very morning to *thnuwnh*. The word is strongly expressive in their language, but not easily rendered into English; it signifies *to retire to his first mother*. Her excuse for not coming sooner was, that her husband dying late in the morning, she was a good while consulting her servants about a convenient place where his body should be laid; and I observed she behaved herself at our house as cheerfully as the rest: She died about three months after.

They live generally to seventy, or seventy-five years, very seldom to four-score: Some weeks before their death they feel a gradual decay, but without pain. During this time they are much visited by their friends, because they cannot go abroad with their usual ease and satisfaction. However, about ten days before their death, which they seldom fail in computing, they return the visits that have been made them by those who are nearest in the neighbourhood, being carried in a convenient sledge drawn by *Yahoos*; which vehicle they use, not only upon this occasion, but when they grow old, upon long journies, or when they are lamed by accident. And therefore, when the dying *Houyhnhnms* return those visits, they take a solemn leave of their friends, as if they were going to some remote part of the country, where they designed to pass the rest of their lives.

I know not whether it may be worth observing, that the *Houyhnhnms* have no word in their language to express any thing that is *evil*, except what they borrow from the deformities or ill qualities of

the *Yahoos*. Thus they denote the folly of a servant, an omission of a child, a stone that cuts their feet, a continuance of foul or unseasonable weather, and the like, by adding to each the epithet of *Yahoo*: For instance, *hbnm Yahoo*, *whnaholm Yahoo*; *nlbmndwihlma Yahoo*; and an ill-contrived house: *nholmbnmroblnw Yahoo*.

I could with great pleasure enlarge farther upon the manners and virtues of this excellent people; but intending in a short time to publish a volume by itself expressly upon that subject, I refer the reader thither; and, in the mean time, proceed to relate my own sad catastrophe.

C H A P. X.

The author's œconomy, and happy life, among the Houyhnhnms. His great improvement in virtue, by conversing with them. Their conversations. The author hath notice given him by his master, that he must depart from the country. He falls into a swoon for grief, but submits. He contrives and finishes a canoe by the help of a fellow-servant, and puts to sea at a venture.

I HAD settled my little œconomy to my own heart's content. My master had ordered a room to be made for me after their manner, about six yards from the house; the sides and floors of which I plaistered with clay, and covered with rush mats of my own contriving. I had beaten hemp, which there grows wild, and made of it a sort of tiking: This I filled with the feathers of several birds I had taken with springes made of *Yahoos* hairs, and were excellent food. I had worked two chairs with my knife, the sorrel nag helping

ing me in the grosser and more laborious part. When my cloaths were worn to rags, I made myself others with the skins of rabbits, and of a certain beautiful animal about the same size, called *nnubnob*, the skin of which is covered with a fine down. Of these I also made very tolerable stockings. I soled my shoes with wood, which I cut from a tree, and fitted to the upper leather; and when this was worn out, I supplied it with the skins of *Tahoos* dried in the sun. I often got honey out of hollow trees, which I mingled with water, or eat with my bread. No man could more verify the truth of these two maxims, *That nature is very easily satisfied*; and, *That necessity is the mother of inventions*. I enjoyed perfect health of body, and tranquillity of mind: I did not feel the treachery or inconstancy of a friend, nor the injuries of a secret or open enemy. I had no occasion of bribing, flattering, or pimping, to procure the favour of any great man, or of his minions: I wanted no defence against fraud or oppression: Here was neither physician to destroy my body, nor lawyer to ruin my fortune; no informer to watch my words and actions, or forge accusations against me for hire: Here were no gibbers, censurers, back-biters, pick pockets, highwaymen, house breakers, attornies, bawds, buffoons, gamesters, politicians, wits, splenetics, tedious talkers, controvertists, ravishers, murderers, robbers, virtuosos; no leaders or followers of party and faction; no encouragers to vice by seducement or examples; no dungeons, axes, gibbets, whipping posts, or pillories; no cheating shopkeepers or mechanics; no pride, vanity, or affectation; no fops, bullies, drunkards, strolling whores, or poxes; no ranting, lewd, expensive wives; no stupid, proud pedants; no importunate, over-bearing, quarrellsome, noisy, roaring, empty, conceited,

excited, swearing companions: No scoundrels
rescued from the dust upon the merit of their vices,
mobility thrown into it on account of their virtues;
nobles, fiddlers, judges, or dancing-masters.
I had the favour of being admitted to several
houyhnhnms, who came to visit or dine with my
master; where his Honour graciously suffered me
to wait in the room, and listen to their discourse.
Both he and his company would often descend to
my questions, and receive my answers. I had
sometimes the honour of attending my master
in his visits to others. I never presumed to speak,
except in answer to a question; and then I did it
with inward regret, because it was a loss of so much
time for improving myself: But I was infinitely
delighted with the station of an humble auditor in
such conversations, where nothing passed but what
was useful, expressed in the fewest and most in-
significant words: Where (as I have already said) the
greatest decency was observed, without the least
degree of ceremony; where no person spoke, with-
out being pleased himself, and pleasing his com-
panions; where there was no interruption, tedious-
ness, heat, or difference of sentiments. They have
the notion, that, when people are met together, a
short silence doth much improve conversation:
This I found to be true; for during those little in-
termissions of talk, new ideas would arise in their
minds, which very much enlivened the discourse.
Their subjects are generally on friendship and be-
nevolence, on order and œconomy; sometimes up-
on the visible operations of nature, or ancient tra-
ditions; upon the bounds and limits of virtue;
upon the unerring rules of reason, or upon some
determinations to be taken at the next great as-
sembly; and often upon the various excellencies
of poetry. I may add, without vanity, that my
presence

presence often gave them sufficient matter for discourse, whereof course, because it afforded my master an occasion the shape of letting his friends into the history of me happened to my country, upon which they were all pleased to make or descant, in a manner not very advantageous to the human kind: And for that reason I shall not repeat what they said; only I may be allowed to observe, that his Honour, to my great admiration, having appeared to understand the nature of *Yahoos* much better than myself. He went through all our vices and follies, and discovered many which I had never mentioned to him, by only supposing what a great qualities a *Yahoo* of their country, with a small proportion of reason, might be capable of exerting, and concluded, with too much probability, how vile, as well as miserable, such a creature must be.

I freely confess, that all the little knowledge which I have of any value, was required by the lectures which I received from my master, and from hearing the discourses of him and his friends; to which I should rather be prouder to listen, than to dictate to the greatest, the wisest, and wisest assembly in Europe. I admired the strength, comeliness, and speed of the inhabitants, and such a constellation of virtue, in such amiable persons, produced in me the highest veneration. At first indeed I did not feel that natural awe, which the *Yahoos*, and all other animals, bear towards them; but it grew upon me by degrees much sooner than I imagined, and was mingled with a respectful love and gratitude, that they would condescend to distinguish me from the rest of my species.

When I thought of my family, my friends, my countrymen, or human race in general, I considered them, as they really were, *Yahoos* in shape and disposition, perhaps a little more civilised, and qualified with the gift of speech; but making no other use of reason, than to improve and multiply those vices,

whereof their brethren in this country had the share that nature allotted them. When I opened to behold the reflection of my own form in a lake or a fountain, I turned away my face in horror and detestation of myself; and could better endure the sight of a common *Yahoo*, than of my own person. By conversing with the Houyhnhnms, looking upon them with delight, I fell to imitate their gait and gesture, which is now grown into a habit; and my friends often tell me in a blunt manner, that *I trot like a horse*; which however I take to be a great compliment: Neither shall I disown, that in speaking I am apt to fall into the voice and manner of the Houyhnhnms, and hear myself howled on that account without the least mortification.

In the midst of all this happiness, and when I was locked upon myself to be fully settled for life, my master sent for me one morning a little earlier than his usual hour. I observed by his countenance, that he was in some perplexity, and at a loss how to begin what he had to speak. After a short silence, he told me, he did not know how to take what he was going to say: That in the last general assembly, when the affair of the *Yahoos* was entered upon, the representatives had taken offence at his keeping a *Yahoo* (meaning myself) in his family, more like a Houyhnhnm than a brute animal: That he was known frequently to converse with me, as if he could receive some advantage or pleasure in my company: That such a practice was not agreeable to reason or nature, or anything ever heard of before among them. The assembly did therefore *exhort* him, either to employ me like the rest of my species, or command me to return him back to the place from whence I came: That the first of these expedients was utterly rejected by all

all the Houyhnhnms who had ever seen me subject to his house or their own ; for they alledged, that because in a cause I had some rudiments of reason, added to the natural pravity of those animals, it was to be feared I might be able to seduce them into the woody and mountainous parts of the country, and bring them in troops by night to destroy the Houyhnhnm cattle, as being naturally of the ravenous kind, and averse from labour.

My master added, that he was daily pressed by the Houyhnhnms of the neighbourhood, to have the assembly's *exhortation* executed, which he could not put off much longer. He doubted it would be impossible for me to swim to another country ; therefore wished I would contrive some sort of vehicle, resembling those I had described to him, that might carry me on the sea ; in which work I should have the assistance of his own servants, as well as those of his neighbours. He concluded, that for his own part he could have been content to keep me in his service as long as I lived ; because he found I had cured myself of some bad habits and dispositions, by endeavouring, as far as my inferior nature was capable, to imitate the Houyhnhnms.

I should here observe to the reader, that a decree of the general assembly in this country is expressed by the word *bnhloayn*, which signifies an *exhortation* as near as I can render it ; for they have no conception how a rational creature can be *compelled*, but only advised, or *exhorted* ; because no person can disobey reason, without giving up his claim to be a rational creature.

I was struck with the utmost grief and despair at my master's discourse ; and being unable to support the agonies I was under, I fell into a swoon at his feet. When I came to myself, he told me, that he concluded I had been dead (for these people are

subject

me subject to no such imbecillities of nature,) I answered in a faint voice, that death would have been too great an happiness: That although I could not blame the assembly's *exhortation*, or the urgency of his intentions; yet, in my weak and corrupt judgment, I thought it might consist with reason to have been more rigorous: That I could not swim a league, and probably the nearest land to theirs might be distant above an hundred: That many materials, necessary for making a small vessel to carry me off, were wholly wanting in this country; which however I could attempt in obedience and gratitude to his honour, although I concluded the thing to be impossible, and therefore looked on myself as already devoted to destruction: That the certain prospect, that an unnatural death was the least of my evils; should supposing I should escape with life by some strange adventure, how could I think, with temper, of passing my days among *Yahoos*, and relapsing into my old corruptions, for want of examples to lead and keep me within the paths of virtue: That I knew too well upon what solid reasons all the determinations of the wise Houyhnhnms were founded, not to be shaken by arguments of mine, a miserable *Yahoo*: And therefore, after presenting him with my humble thanks for the offer of his servants assistance in making a vessel, and desiring a reasonable time for so difficult a work, I told him I would endeavour to preserve a wretched being; and if ever I returned to England, was not without hopes of being useful to my own species, by celebrating the praises of the renowned Houyhnhnms, and proposing their virtues to the imitation of mankind.

My master, in a few words, made me a very gracious reply, allowed me the space of two months to finish my boat; and ordered the ferrel nag, my fellow-servant, (for so at this distance I may presume

to call him,) to follow my instructions; because I told my master, that his help would be sufficient, and I knew he had a tenderneis for me.

In his company, my first business was to go to that part of the coast where my rebellious crew had ordered me to be set on shore. I got upon the height, and looking on every side into the sea, fancied I saw a small island towards the *north-east*. I took out my pocket-glass, and could then clearly distinguish it about five leagues off, as I computed; but it appeared to the sorrel nag to be only a blue cloud: For as he had no conception of any country beside his own, so he could not be as expert in distinguishing remote objects at sea, as we who so much converse in that element.

After I had discovered this island, I considered no farther; but resolved it should, if possible, be the first place of my banishment, leaving the consequence to fortune.

I returned home, and consulting with the sorrel nag, we went into a copse at some distance, where I with my knife, and he with a sharp flint fastened very artificially after their manner to a wooden handle, cut down several oak wattles, about the thickness of a walking-staff, and some larger pieces. But I shall not trouble the reader with a particular description of my own mechanics: Let it suffice to say, that in six weeks time, with the help of the sorrel nag, who performed the parts that required most labour, I finished a sort of Indian canoe, but much larger, covering it with the skins of *Yahoos*, well stitched together with hempen threads of my own making. My sail was likewise composed of the skins of the same animal; but I made use of the youngest I could get; the older being too tough and thick; and I likewise provided myself with four paddles. I laid in a stock of boiled flesh, of rabbits and fowls; and

took with me two vessels, one filled with milk, the other with water.

I tried my canoe in a large pond near my master's house, and then corrected in it what was amiss; stopping all the chinks with *Yaboos* tallow, till I made it staunch, and able to bear me and my freight. When it was as complete as I could possibly make it, I had it drawn on a carriage very gently by *Yaboos* to the sea-side, under the conduct of the *rel nag*, and another servant.

When all was ready, and the day came for my departure, I took leave of my master and lady and the whole family, mine eyes flowing with tears, and my heart quite sunk with grief. But his Honour, out of curiosity, and perhaps (if I may speak it without vanity) partly out of kindness, was determined to see me in my canoe; and got several friends to accompany him. I was forced to wait above an hour for the tide; and then observing the wind very fortunately bearing towards the island to which I intended to steer my course, I took a second leave of my master: But, as I was going to prostrate myself to kiss his hoof, he did me the honour to raise me gently to my mouth. I am not ignorant how much I have been censured for mentioning this last particular. Detractors are pleased to think it improbable, that so illustrious a person should descend to give so great a mark of distinction to a creature so inferior as I. Neither have I forgotten how apt some travellers are to boast of extraordinary favours they have received: But if their censurers were better acquainted with the noble and courteous disposition of the Houyhnhnms, they would soon change their opinion.

I paid my respects to the rest of the Houyhnhnms in his Honour's company; then getting into my canoe, I pushed off from shore.

C H A P. XI.

The author's dangerous voyage. He arrives at New Holland, hoping to settle there. Is wounded with an arrow by one of the natives. Is seized and carried by force into a Portuguese ship. The great civilities of the captain. The author arrives at England.

I BEGAN this desperate voyage on February 15, 1714-15, at 9 o'clock in the morning. The wind was very favourable; however I made use at first only of my paddles; but considering I should soon be weary, and that the wind might chop about, I ventured to set up my little sail; and thus, with the help of the tide, I went at the rate of a league and a half an hour, as near as I could guess. My master and his friends continued on the shore, till I was almost out of sight; and I often heard the sorrel nag (who always loved me) crying out, *bnuy illa nyha majab Yahoo*, Take care of thyself, gentle Yahoo.

My design was, if possible, to discover some small island, uninhabited, yet sufficient by my labour to furnish me with the necessaries of life, which I would have thought a greater happiness, than to be first minister in the politest court of Europe; so horrible was the idea I conceived of returning to live in the society, and under the government, of *Taboos*. For, in such a solitude as I desired, I could at least enjoy my own thoughts, and reflect with delight on the virtues of these inimitable Houyhnhnms, without any opportunity of degenerating into the vices and corruptions of my own species.

The reader may remember what I related, when my crew conspired against me, and confined me to

my

my cabbin : How I continued there several weeks, without knowing what course we took ; and when we were put ashore in the long-boat, how the sailors told me, with oaths, whether true or false, that they knew not in what part of the world we were. However, I did then believe us to be about ten degrees Southward of the Cape of Good-Hope, or about 45 degrees Southern latitude, as I gathered from some general words I overheard among them, and being I supposed to the South-East in their intended voyage to Madagascar. And although this were but little better than conjecture, yet I resolved to steer my course Eastward, hoping to reach the South-West coast of new-Holland, and perhaps some such island as I desired, lying Westward of it. The wind was full West ; and by six in the evening I computed I had gone Eastward at least eighteen leagues, when I espied a very small island about half a league off, which I soon reached. It was nothing but a rock, with one creek naturally washed by the force of tempests. Here I put in my canoe, and climbing a part of the rock, I could plainly discover land to the East, extending from South to North. I lay all night in my canoe ; and repeating my voyage early in the morning, I arrived in seven hours to the South-East point of new Holland. This confirmed me in the opinion I have long entertained that the *maps* and *charts* place this country at least three degrees more to the East than it really is ; which thought I communicated many years ago to my worthy friend, Mr Herman Coll, and gave him my reasons for it, although he was rather chosen to follow other authors. I saw no inhabitants in the place where I landed ; and being unarmed, I was afraid of venturing into the country. I found some shell-fish on the shore, and eat them raw, not daring to kindle a

fire, for fear of being discovered by the natives. I continued three days feeding on oysters and limpets, to save my own provisions; and I fortunately found a brook of excellent water, which gave me great relief.

On the fourth day, venturing out early a little too far, I saw twenty or thirty natives, upon a height not above five hundred yards from me. They were stark naked, men, women, and children, round a fire, as I could discover by the smoke. One of them spied me, and gave notice to the rest; five of them advanced towards me, leaving the women and children at the fire. I made what haste I could to the shore, and getting into my canoe, shoved off: The savages observing my retreat, ran after me; and before I could get far enough into the sea, discharged an arrow which wounded me deeply on the inside of my left knee. (I shall carry the mark to my grave). I apprehended the arrow might be poisoned, and paddling out of the reach of their darts, (being a calm day,) I made a shift to suck the wound, and dress it as well as I could.

I was at a loss what to do, for I durst not return to the same landing-place, but stood to the North, and was forced to paddle; for the wind, though very gentle, was against me blowing North-West. As I was looking about for a secure landing-place, I saw a sail to the North North East, which appearing every minute more visible, I was in some doubt whether I should wait for them or no: But at last my detestation of the *Yahoo* race prevailed; and turning my canoe, I sailed and paddled together to the South, and got into the same creek from whence I set out in the morning, chusing rather to trust myself among these Barbarians, than live with European *Yahoos*. I drew up my

canoe

canoe as close as I could to the shore, and hid myself behind a stone by the little brook, which, as I have already said, was excellent water. The ship came within half a league of this creek, and sent out her long-boat, with vessels to take in fresh water (for the place it seems was very well known); but I did not observe it till the boat was almost on shore, and it was too late to seek another hiding-place. The seamen, at their landing, observed my canoe, and rummaging it all over, easily conjectured that the owner could not be far off. Four of them, well armed, searched every cranny and lurking hole, till at last they found me flat on my face behind the stone. They gazed a while, in admiration at my strange uncouth dress; my coat made of skins, my wooden-soled shoes, and my furred stockings; from whence however they concluded I was not a native of the place, who all go naked. One of the seamen, in Portuguese, bid me rise, and asked who I was? I understood that language very well, and getting upon my feet, said, I was a poor *Rahoo* banished from the Houyhnhnms, and desired they would please to let me depart. They admired to hear me answer them in their own tongue, and saw by my complexion I must be an European, but were at a loss to know what I meant by *Rahoos*, and *Houyhnhnms*, and at the same time fell a laughing at my strange tone in speaking, which resembled the neighing of a horse. I trembled all the while betwixt fear and hatred: I again desired leave to depart, and was gently moving to my canoe; but they laid hold on me, desiring to know what country I was of? whence I came? with many other questions. I told them I was born in England, from whence I came about five years ago, and then their country and ours were at peace. I therefore hoped they would not treat me as an enemy, since I meant

them

them no harm, but was a poor *Yahoo*, seeking some desolate place where to pass the remainder of his unfortunate life.

When they began to talk, I thought I never heard or saw any thing so unnatural ; for it appeared to me as monstrous, as if a dog or a cow should speak in England, or a *Yahoo* in Houyhnhnm-land. The honest Portuguese were equally amazed at my strange dress, and the odd manner of delivering my words, which however they understood very well. They spoke to me with great humanity, and said they were sure the captain would carry me *gratis* to Lisbon, from whence I might return to my own country : That two of the seamen would go back to the ship, inform the captain of what they had seen, and receive his orders ; in the mean time, unless I would give my solemn oath not to fly, they would secure me by force. I thought it best to comply with their proposal. They were very curious to know my story, but I gave them very little satisfaction : And they all conjectured, that my misfortunes had impaired my reason. In two hours the boat, which went laden with vessels of water, returned with the captain's command to fetch me on board. I fell on my knees, to preserve my liberty ; but all was in vain, and the men having tied me with cords, heaved me into the boat, from whence I was taken into the ship, and from thence into the captain's cabin.

His name was Pedro de Mendez ; he was a very courteous and generous person : He entreated me to give some account of myself, and desired to know what I would eat or drink ; said, I should be used as well as himself, and spoke so many obliging things, that I wondered to find such civilities from a *Yahoo*. However, I remained silent and sullen ; I was ready to faint at the very smell of him and his men.

en. At last I desired something to eat out of my own canoe ; but he ordered me a chicken, and some excellent wine, and then directed that I should be at to bed in a very clean cabin. I would not dress myself, but lay on the bed-cloaths, and in half an hour stole out when I thought the crew was at dinner, and getting to the side of the ship, was going to leap into the sea, and swim for my life, rather than continue among *Rahoes*. But one of the seamen prevented me, and having informed the captain, I was chained to my cabin.

After dinner, Don Pedro came to me, and desired to know my reason for so desperate an attempt ; assured me, he only meant to do me all the service he was able, and spoke so very movingly, that at last I descended to treat him like an animal which had some little portion of reason. I gave him a very short relation of my voyage ; of the conspiracy against me by my own men ; of the country where they set me on shore, and of my five years residence there. All which he looked upon, as if it were a dream or vision ; whereat I took great offence ; for I had quite forgot the facility of lying, so peculiar to *Rahoes* in all countries where they preside, and consequently the disposition of suspecting truth in others of their own species. I asked him, whether it were the custom in his country, to *say the thing which was not* ? I assured him, I had almost forgotten what he meant by falsehood, and if I had lived a thousand years in Houyhnhnm-land, I should never have heard a lie from the meanest servant : That I was altogether indifferent whether he believed me or no ; but however, in return for his favours, I would give so much allowance to the corruption of his nature, as to answer any objection he would please to make, and then he might easily discover the truth.

The

The captain, a wise man, after many endeavours to catch me tripping in some part of my story, at last began to have a better opinion of my veracity. But he added, that since I professed so inviolable an attachment to truth, I must give him my word and honour to bear him company in this voyage, without attempting any thing against my life, or else he would continue me a prisoner till we arrived at Lisbon. I gave him the promise he required: but at the same time protested, that I would suffer the greatest hardships, rather than return to live among *Yahoos*.

Our voyage passed without any considerable accident. In gratitude to the captain, I sometimes sat with him at his earnest request, and strove to conceal my antipathy against human kind, although it often broke out, which he suffered to pass without observation. But the greatest part of the day I confined myself to my cabin, to avoid seeing any of the crew. The captain had oftentimes entreated me to strip myself of my savage dress, and offered to lend me the best suit of cloaths he had. This I would not be prevailed on to accept, abhorring to cover myself with any thing that had been on the back of a *Yahoo*. I only desired he would lend me two clean shirts, which, having been washed since he wore them, I believed would not so much defile me. These I changed every second day, and washed them myself.

We arrived at Lisbon, Nov. 5. 1715. At our landing, the captain forced me to cover myself with his cloak, to prevent the rabble from crouding about me. I was conveyed to his own house; and at my earnest request, he led me up to the highest room backwards. I conjured him to conceal from all persons what I had told him of the *Houyhnhnms*; because the least hint of such a story would

not

not only draw numbers of people to see me, but probably put me in danger of being imprisoned, or burnt by the *Inquisition*. The captain persuaded me to accept a suit of cloaths newly made; but I would not suffer the tailor to take my measure; however, Don Pedro being almost my size, they fitted me well enough. He acquainted me with other necessaries, all new, which I waited for twenty-four hours, before I would use them.

The captain had no wife, nor above three servants, none of which were suffered to attend at meals; and his whole deportment was so obliging, added to every good *human* understanding, that I gradually began to tolerate his company. He gained so far upon me, that I ventured to look out of the back window. By degrees I was brought into another room, from whence I peeped into the street, but drew my head back in a fright. In a week's time he seduced me down to the doer. I found my error gradually lessened, but my hatred and contempt seemed to increase. I was at last bold enough to walk the street in his company, but kept my nose well stopped with rue, or sometimes with tobacco.

In ten days Don Pedro, to whom I had given some account of my domestic affairs, put it upon me as a matter of honour and conscience, that I ought to return to my native country, and live at home with my wife and children. He told me, there was an English ship in the port just ready to sail, and he would furnish me with all things necessary. It would be tedious to repeat his arguments, and my contradictions. He said it was altogether impossible to find such a solitary island as I had desired to live in; but I might command in my own house, and pass my time in a manner as recluse as I pleased.

I com-

I complied at last, finding I could not do better. I left Lisbon the 24th day of November, in an English merchantman ; but who was the master, I never inquired. Don Pedro accompanied me to the ship, and lent me twenty pounds. He took a kindly leave of me, and embraced me at parting, which I bore as well as I could. During this last voyage I had no commerce with the master, or any of his men ; but pretending I was sick, kept close in my cabin. On the 5th of December 1715, we cast anchor in the Downs about nine in the morning, and at three in the afternoon I got safe to my house at Rotherhith.

My wife and family received me with great surprise and joy, because they concluded me certainly dead ; but I must freely confess the sight of them filled me only with hatred, disgust, and contempt ; and the more by reflecting on the near alliance I had to them. For although, since my unfortunate exile from the Houyhnhnm country, I had compelled myself to tolerate the sight of *Yahoos*, and to converse with Don Pedro de Mendez, yet my memory and imagination were perpetually filled with the virtues and ideas of those exalted Houyhnhnms. And when I began to consider, that by copulating with one of the *Yahoo*-species I had become a parent of more, it struck me with the utmost shame, confusion, and horror.

As soon as I entered the house, my wife took me in her arms, and kissed me : At which, having not been used to the touch of that odious animal for so many years, I fell into a swoon for almost an hour. At the time I am writing, it is five years since my last return to England : During the first year, I could not endure my wife or children in my presence ; the very smell of them was intolerable, much less could I suffer them to eat in the same

room.

etter m. To this hour they dare not presume to
n En ch my bread, or drink out of the same cup;
I ne ther was I ever able to let one of them take me
o th the hand. The first money I laid out was to
kin y two young stone-horses, which I keep in a good
hich ble ; and next to them the groom is my greatest
yage ourite, for I feel my spirits revived by the
of hi ell he contracts in the stable. My horses un-
n my stand me tolerably well ; I converse with them
e ca least four hours every day. They are strangers
ning bridle or saddle ; they live in great amity with
house, and friendship to each other.

C H A P. XII.

t sur-
ainly
them
npt
nce
unat
npel-
nd to
y me-
with
nms.
ating
a pa-
name,
the author's veracity. His design in publishing this
work. His censure of those travellers who swerve
from the truth. The author clears himself from
any sinister ends in writing. An objection answer-
ed. The method of planting colonies. His native
country commended. The right of the crown to
those countries described by the author is justified.
The difficulty of conquering them. The author
takes his leave of the reader ; proposeth his manner
of living for the future ; gives good advice, and
concludeth.

k me
g not
for so
mour.
e my
ear, I
pre-
able,
same
oom.
T H U S, gentle reader, I have given thee a
faithful history of my travels for sixteen
years and above seven months ; wherein I have
not been so studious of ornament as of truth. I
could perhaps, like others, have astonished thee
with strange improbable tales ; but I rather chuse
to relate plain matter of fact, in the simplest man-
ner and stile ; because my principal design was to
inform, and not to amuse thee.

It is easy for us who travel into remote countries, which are seldom visited by Englishmen, and other Europeans, to form descriptions of wonderful animals both at sea and land. Whereas a traveller's chief aim should be to make men wiser and better, and to improve their minds by the good, as well as bad example, of what they see in the most remarkable places.

I could heartily wish a law was enacted, that every traveller, before he were permitted to publish his voyages, should be obliged to make oath before the Lord High Chancellor, that all he intended to print was absolutely true, to the best of his knowledge; for then the world would no longer be deceived, as it usually is; while some writers, to make their works pass the better upon the public, impose the grossest falsties on the unwary reader. I have perused several books of travels with great delight in my younger days; but having since gone over many parts of the globe, and been able to contradict many fabulous accounts from my own observation, I have given me a great disgust against this part of reading, and some indignation to see the credulity of mankind so impudently abused. Therefore, since I found my acquaintance were pleased to think my poor endeavours might not be unacceptable to my country, I imposed on myself, as a maxim never to be swayed from, that I would *strictly adhere to truth*: Neither indeed can I be ever under the least temptation to vary from it, while I retain in my mind the lectures and example of my noble master, and the other illustrious Houyhnhnms, of whom I had so long the honour to be an humble hearer.

—*Nec si miserum fortuna Sinonem
Finxit, vanum etiam, mendacemque improba fingit.*

I know very well how little reputation is to be made

by writings, which require neither genius nor memory, nor indeed any other talent, except a good memory, or an exact *journal*. I know likewise, that writers of travels, like *dictionary*-makers, are sunk in oblivion by the weight and bulk of those who come by them, and therefore lie uppermost. And it is highly probable, that such travellers, who shall hereafter visit the countries described in this work of mine, at any time, by detecting my errors (if there be any) and publishing many new discoveries of their own, will be out of vogue, and stand in my place, making them proud to forget that ever I was an author. This indeed would be too great a mortification, if I wrote myself the same: But as my sole intention was the *public* use thereof, I cannot be altogether disappointed. For who will read of the virtues I have mentioned in the virtuous Houyhnhnms, without being ashamed of his own vices, when he considers himself as the ruler and governing animal of his country? I shall say nothing of those remote nations, where *Yahoos* predominate; amongst which the least corrupted are the part of the *Obdignagians*, whose wise maxims in morality and government it would be our happiness to observe. I therefore forbear descanting farther, and rather leave it to the judicious reader to his own remarks and applications.

I am not a little pleased, that this work of mine will possibly meet with no censurers: For what objections can be made against a writer, who relates only plain facts, that happened in such distant countries, where we have not the least interest or respect either to trade or negotiations? I have carefully avoided every fault, with which common writers of travels are often too justly charged. Besides, I meddle not the least with any *party*, but write without passion, prejudice, or ill-will, against any man, or number of men whatsoever. I write

for the noblest end, to inform and instruct mankind the
 over whom I may, without breach of modesty, pre-
 tend to some superiority, from the advantages they
 received by conversing so long among the most
 accomplished Houyhnhnms. I write without any
 view towards profit or praise. I never suffer a
 word to pass, that may look like reflection, or pos-
 sibly give the least offence, even to those who are
 most ready to take it. So that, I hope, I may with
 justice pronounce myself an author perfectly blame-
 less; against whom the tribes of answerers, con-
 siderers, observers, reflecters, detecters, remarkers
 will never be able to find matter for exercising their
 talents.

I confess it was whispered to me, that I was bound
 in duty, as a subject of England, to have given in
 memorial to a Secretary of State at my first coming
 over; because, whatever lands are discovered by
 subject belong to the crown. But I doubt whether
 our conquests, in the countries I treat of, would be
 as easy as those of Ferdinando Cortez over the
 naked Americans. The Lilliputians, I think, are hard-
 ly worth the charge of a fleet and army to reduce
 them; and I question whether it might be prudent;
 or safe to attempt the Brobdingnagians; or whether
 an English army would be much at their ease
 with the flying island over their heads. The Houy-
 hnms indeed appear not to be so well prepared
 for war, a science to which they are perfect stran-
 gers, and especially against missile weapons. How-
 ever, supposing myself to be a minister of state,
 I could never give my advice for invading them.
 Their prudence, unanimity, unacquaintedness with
 fear, and their love of their country, would amply
 supply all defects in the military art. Imagine twen-
 ty thousand of them breaking into the midst of any
 European army, confounding the ranks, overturn-
 ing

knocking the carriages, battering the warrior's faces into
 y, preumy by terrible yerks from their hinder hoofs;
 ages r they would well deserve the character given to
 e magustus: *Recalcitrat undique tutus*. But instead of
 ut an opofals for conquering that magnanimous nation,
 offer rather wish they were in a capacity, or disposi-
 or pon, to send a sufficient number of their inhabi-
 ho ants for civilizing Europe, by teaching us the first
 y with principles of honour, justice, truth, temperance,
 blame ablic spirit, fortitude, chastity, friendship, bene-
 confolence, and fidelity: The names of all which vir-
 arkeres are still retained among us in most languages,
 g the d are to be met with in modern, as well as an
 ent authors; which I am able to assert from my
 bound n small reading.

en in But I had another reason, which made me less
 om in ward to enlarge his Majesty's dominions by my
 by discoveries. To say the truth, I had conceived a
 the w scruples with relation to the distributive justice
 uld be princes upon those occasions. For instance, a
 he new of pirates are driven by a storm, they know
 hard ot whether; at length, a boy discovers land from
 reducee top-mast; they go on shore to rob and plun-
 rudener; they see an harmless people, are entertained
 e whe ich kindness; they give the country a new name;
 ir easey take formal possession of it for their king; they
 Houy t up a rotten plank or a stone for a memorial;
 epare ey murder two or three dozen of the natives,
 stranding away a couple more by force for a sample,
 How t turn home, and get their pardon. Here commen-
 ate, Is a new dominion, acquired with a title by *divine*
 them ght. Ships are sent with the first opportunity; the
 s with natives driven out or destroyed; their princes tor-
 amply ured to discover their gold; a free licence given
 twen o all acts of inhumanity and lust; the earth reek-
 of an g with the blood of its inhabitants; and this exe-
 rturn- able crew of butchers employed in so pious an
 ing

expedition, is a *modern colony*, sent to convert and civilize an idolatrous and barbarous people.

But this description, I confess, doth by no means affect the British nation, who may be an example to the whole world for their wisdom, care and justice in planting colonies; their liberal endowments for the advancement of religion and learning; their choice of devout and able pastors to propagations of *Christianity*; their caution in stocking their provinces with people of sober lives and conversations far from this the mother kingdom; their strict regard to the distribution of justice in supplying the civil administration, through all their colonies, with officers of the greatest abilities, utter strangers to corruption; and, to crown all, by sending the most vigilant and virtuous governors, who have no other view than the happiness of the people over whom they preside, and the honour of the King to their master.

But as the countries, which I have described, do I do not appear to have any desire of being conquered and enslaved, murdered or driven out by colonies, and to nor abound either in gold, silver, sugar, or tobacco; I did humbly conceive they were by no means proper objects of our zeal, our valour, or our interest. However, if those whom it more concerns think fit to be of another opinion, I am ready to move, when I shall be lawfully called, that no European did ever visit these countries before me. I mean, if the inhabitants ought to be believed, unless a dispute may arise concerning the two *Yahoos*. My said to have been seen many ages ago upon a high mountain in Houyhnhnm-land.

But as to the formality of taking possession in my sovereign's name, it never came once into my thoughts; and if it had, yet, as my affairs then stood, I should perhaps, in point of prudence and self-

vert self preservation, have put it off to a better opportunity.

mean Having thus answered the only objection that might ever be raised against me as a traveller, I here took a final leave of all my courteous readers, and returned to enjoy my own speculations in my little garden at Rotherhith; to apply those excellent maxims of virtue, which I learned among the Houyhnhnms; to instruct the *Yahoos* of my own family, in so far as I shall find them docible animals; to be regarded my figure often in a glass, and thus, if possible, to accustom myself by time to tolerate the sight of a human creature; to lament the brutality of Houyhnhnms in my own country, but always treat their members with respect for the sake of my noble master, his family, his friends, and the whole Houyhnhnm race, whom these of ours have the honor to resemble in all their lineaments, however their intellectuals came to degenerate.

ed, do I began last week to permit my wife to sit at dinner with me at the farthest end of a long table; and to answer (but with the utmost brevity) the tedious questions I asked her. Yet the smell of a *Yahoo*, continuing very offensive, I always kept my nose well stoppt with rue, lavender, or tobacco leaves. and although it be hard for a man late in life to remove old habits, I am not altogether out of hopes, to see some time, to suffer a neighbour *Yahoo* in my company, without the apprehensions I am yet under of his teeth or his claws.

Yahoos My reconciliation to the *Yahoo* kind in general might not be so difficult, if they would be content with those vices and follies only which nature hath allotted them to. I am not in the least provoked at the sight of a lawyer, a pick-pocket, a thief, a colonel, a fool, a lord, a gamester, a politician, a pimp, a whore-monger, a physician, an evidence, a laborer,

ner,

ner, an attorney, a traitor, or the like : This is all according to the due course of things. But when I behold a lump of deformity and disease, both in body and mind, smitten with *pride*, it immediately breaks all the measures of my patience ; neither shall I ever be able to comprehend how such an animal, and such a vice, could tally together. The wise and virtuous Houyhnhnms, who abound in all excellencies that can adorn a rational creature, have no name for this vice in their language, which hath not terms to express any thing that is evil, except those whereby they describe the detestable qualities of their *Yahoos*, among which they were not able to distinguish this of pride, for want of thoroughly understanding human nature, as it sheweth itself in other countries where that animal presides. But I, who had more experience, could plainly observe some rudiments of it among the wild *Yahoos*.

But the Houyhnhnms, who live under the government of reason, are no more proud of the good qualities they possess, than I should be for not wanting a leg or an arm, which no man in his wits would boast of, although he must be miserable without them. I dwell the longer upon this subject, from the desire I have to make the society of an English *Yahoo* by any means not insupportable ; and therefore I here intreat those who have any tincture of this absurd vice, that they will not presume to come in my sight.

is all
where
both in
mediately
either
ch an
The
nd in
ature,
which
il, ex
quali-
e not
tho-
eweth
fides.
y ob-
ahoos.
e go-
f the
or not
s wits
with-
bject,
of an
able;
e any
t pre-

*the three following Poems were written, as we
are informed, by Dr ARBUTHNOT, Mr POPE,
and Mr GAY.*

T O

UINBUS FLESTRIN,

T H E

MAN-MOUNTAIN.

A LILLIPUTIAN ODE.

IN Amaze
Lost, I gaze.
Can our eyes
Reach thy size?
May my lays
Swell with praise,
Worthy thee!
Worthy me!
Muse, inspire
All thy Fire!
Bards of old
Of him told,
When they said,
Atlas' head
Propt the skies:

See! and believe your eyes!

II, See

II.

See him stride
 Valleys wide :
 Over woods,
 Over floods.
 When he treads,
 Mountains heads
 Groan and shake :
 Armies quake,
 Lest his spurn
 Overturn
 Man and steed :
 Troops take heed !
 Left and right,
 Speed your flight !
 Lest an host
 Beneath his foot be lost.

III.

Turn'd aside
 From his hide,
 Safe from wound
 Darts rebound.
 From his nose
 Clouds he blows :
 When he speaks,
 Thunder breaks !
 When he eats,
 Famine threats !
 When he drinks,
 Neptune shrinks !
 Nigh thy Ear,
 In mid-air,
 On thy hand,
 Let me stand ;
 So shall I
 Lofly poet ! touch the sky.

T H E
L A M E N T A T I O N
O F

Glumdalclitch, for the Loss of *Grildrig* :

A P A S T O R A L.

SOON as *Glumdalclitch* miss'd her pleasing care,
 She wept, she blubber'd, and she tore her hair.
 No *British* miss sincerer grief has known,
 For squirrel missing, or her sparrow flown.
 She furl'd her sampler, and haul'd in her thread,
 And stuck her needle into *Grildrig's* bed ;
 Then spread her hands, and with a bounce let fall
 Her baby, like the giant in *Guildhall*.
 She roars of thunder now she roars, and now
 She gently whimpers like a lowing cow :
 Yet lovely in her sorrow still appears,
 Her locks dishevell'd, and her flood of tears,
 As like the lofty barn of some rich swain,
 When from the thatch drips fast a show'r of rain.
 In vain she search'd each cranny of the house,
 Each gaping chink impervious to a mouse.
 Was it for this (she cry'd) with daily care,
 Within thy reach I set the vinegar ?
 And fill'd the cruet with the acid tide,
 While pepper-water worms thy bait supplied ?
Where

' Where twin'd the silver eel around thy hook,
 ' And all the little monsters of the brook.
 ' Sure in that lake he dropt : My *Grilly's* drown'd,
 ' She *dragg'd* the cruet, but no *Grildrig* found.

' Vain is thy courage, *Grilly*, vain thy boast :
 ' But little creatures enterprize the most.
 ' Trembling, I've seen thee dare the kitten's paw,
 ' Nay, mix with children, as they play'd at taw,
 ' Nor fear the marbles, as they bounding flew :
 ' Marbles to them, but rolling rocks to you.

' Why did I trust thee with that giddy youth ?
 ' Who from a *page* can ever learn the truth ?
 ' Vers'd in court-tricks, that money-loving boy,
 ' To some lord's daughter sold the living toy ;
 ' Or rent him limb from limb in cruel play,
 ' As children tear the wings of flies away.

' From place to place o'er *Brobignag* I'll roame,
 ' And never will return, or bring thee home.
 ' But who hath eyes to trace the passing wind ?
 ' How, then, thy fairy footsteps can I find ?
 ' Dost thou bewilder'd wander all alone,
 ' In the green thicket of a mossy stone,
 ' Or tumbled from the toad-stool's slippery round,
 ' Perhaps all maim'd lie grov'ling on the ground ?
 ' Dost thou, imbosom'd in the lovely rose,
 ' Or sunk within the peach's down repose ?
 ' Within the king-cup if thy limbs are spread,
 ' Or in the golden cowslip's velvet head.
 ' O shew me, *Flora*, 'midst those sweets the flow'r
 ' Where sleeps my *Grildrig* in his fragrant bow'r.

' But ah ! I fear thy little fancy roves
 ' On little females, and on little loves ;
 ' Thy pigmy children, and thy tiny spouse,
 ' The baby play-things that adorn thy house.
 ' Doors, windows, chimneys, and the spacious
 rooms,

' Equal in size to cells of honeycombs,

Hast

Hast t
 Thy b
 Or, in
 Shall
 And f
 To se
 My sp
 Mimi
 No m
 As se
 How
 A dis
 How
 And
 She
 Soft as
 She so
 Which
 O ! sq
 To w
 The p
 And A

The ca
 Mr
 ben
 his
 foot

W

Hast thou for these now ventur'd from the shore,
 Thy barque a bean-shell, and a straw thine oar ?
 Or, in thy box, now bounding on the main,
 Shall I ne'er bear thyself and house again ?
 And shall I set thee on my hand no more,
 To see thee leap the lines, and traverse o'er
 My spacious palm ? of statue scarce a span,
 Mimic the actions of a real man ?
 No more behold thee turn my watch's key,
 As seamen at a capstern anchors weigh ?
 How wert thou wont to walk with cautious tread,
 A dish of tea like milk-pail on thy head ?
 How chace the mite that bore thy cheese away,
 And kept the rolling maggot at a bay ?

She said ; but broken accents stopt her voice,
 Soft as the speaking-trumpet's mellow noise :
 She sobb'd a storm, and wip'd her flowing eyes,
 Which seem'd like two broad suns in misty skies :
 O ! squander not thy grief ; those tears command
 To weep upon our cod in *Newfoundland* :
 The plenteous pickle shall preserve the fish,
 And *Europe* taste thy sorrows in her dish.

MARY GULLIVER

TO

Capt. LEMUEL GULLIVER.

ARGUMENT.

The captain, some time after his return, being retired to Mr Symphon's in the country ; Mrs Gulliver apprehending, from his late behaviour, some estrangement of his affections, writes him the following exostulating, soothing, and tenderly-complaining EPISTLE.

W Elcome, thrice welcome, to thy native place !
 ——— What ! touch me not ? What ! shun a
 wife's embrace ?

G g

Have

Have I for this thy tedious absence borne,
And wak'd, and wish'd whole nights for thy re-
turn?

In five long years I took no second spouse,
What *Redriff* wife so long hath kept her vows?
Your eyes, your nose, inconstancy betray;
Your nose you stop, your eyes you turn away.
'Tis said, that thou shouldst *cleave unto thy wife*;
Once *thou* didst cleave, and *I* could cleave for life.
Hear, and relent! hark, how thy children moan;
Be kind at least to these, they are thy own;
Be bold, and count them all; secure to find
The honest number that you left behind.
See how they pat thee with their pretty paws:
Why start thee, are they snakes? or have they claws?
Thy Christian seed, our mutual flesh and bone:
Be kind at least to these, they are thy own.

*Biddel**, like thee, might farthest *India* rove;
He chang'd his country, but retain'd his love.
There's captain *Pannel*, absent half his life,
Comes back, and is the kinder to his wife.
Yet *Pannel's* wife is brown compar'd to me,
And mistress *Biddel* sure is fifty-three.

Not touch me! never neighbour call'd me Slut:
Was *Flimnap's* dame more sweet in *Lilliput*?
I've no red hair to breathe an odious fume;
At least thy consort's cleaner than thy groom.
Why then that dirty stable-boy thy care?
What mean those visits from the *Sorrel Mare*?
Say, by what witchcraft, or what Dæmon led,
Preferr'st thou *litter* to the marriage bed?

Some say, the dev'l himself is in that *mare*:
If so, our *Dean* shall drive him forth by prayer.
Some think you mad, some think you are possess'd,
That *bedlam* and clean straw would suit you best:
Vain means, alas, this frenzy to appease!
That *straw*, that *straw* would heighten the disease.

* Names of sea Captains mentioned in Gulliver's Travels.

My bed (the scene of all our former joys,
 Witness two lovely girls, two lovely boys)
 Alone I press; in dreams I call my dear,
 I stretch my hand, no *Gulliver* is there!
 I wake, I rise, and shiv'ring with the frost,
 Search all the house, my *Gulliver* is lost!
 Forth in the street I rush with frantic cries;
 The windows open; all the neighbours rise;
Where sleeps my Gulliver? O tell me where!
 The neighbours answer, 'With the Sorrel Mare.

At early morn I to the market haste,
 (Studious in ev'ry thing to please thy taste;)
 A curious fowl and *sparragrass* I chose,
 (For I remember you were fond of those,)
 Three shillings cost the first, the last sev'n groats:
 Sullen you turn from both, and call for *oats*.

Others bring goods and treasure to their houses,
 Something to deck their pretty babes and spouses;
 My *only* token was a cup like horn,
 That's made of nothing but a lady's *corn*.
 'Tis not for that I grieve; no, 'tis to see
 The groom and *forrel mare* prefer'd to me.

These for some moments when you deign to quit,
 And (at due distance) sweet discourse admit,
 'Tis all my pleasure thy past toil to know,
 For pleas'd remembrance builds delight on woe:
 At ev'ry danger pants thy consort's breast,
 And gaping infants squal to hear the rest.
 How did I tremble, when by thousands bound,
 I saw thee stretch'd on *Lilliputian* ground;
 When scaling armies climb'd up ev'ry part;
 Each step they trod I felt upon my heart.
 But when thy torrent quench'd the dreadful blaze,
 King, queen, and nation, staring with amaze,
 Full in my view how all my husband came,
 And what extinguish'd theirs, increas'd my flame.
 Those *spectacles*, ordain'd thine eyes to save,
 Were once my present; love that armour gave.

How did I mourn at *Bolgolam's* decree !
 For when he sign'd thy death, he sentenc'd me:
 When folks might see thee all the country round
 For sixpence, I'd have given a thousand pound,
 Lord ! when the *giant-babe* that head of thine
 Got in his mouth, my heart was up in mine !
 When in the *marrow-bone* I see thee ramm'd,
 Or, on the house-top, by the *monkey* cramm'd ;
 The piteous images renew my pain,
 And all thy dangers I weep o'er again.
 But on the *maiden's nipple* when you rid,
 Pray heav'n 'twas all a wanton maiden did !
Glumdalclitch too !—with thee I mourn her case,
 Heav'n guard the gentle girl from all disgrace !
 O may the king that one neglect forgive,
 And pardon her the fault by which I live !
 Was there no other way to set him free ?
 My life, alas ! I fear, prov'd death to thee.

O teach me, dear, new words to speak my flame,
 Teach me to woo thee by thy best-lov'd name !
 Whether the style of *Grildrig* please thee most,
 So call'd on *Brobdingnag's* stupendous coast,
 When on the monarch's ample hand you sate,
 And halloo'd in his ear intrigues of state :
 Or *Quinbus Flestrin* more endearment brings,
 When like a mountain you look down on kings :
 If Ducal *Nardac*, *Lilliputian* peer,
 Or *Glumglum's* humbler tide cou'd soothe thine ear ?
 Nay, would kind *Jove* my organs so dispose,
 To hymn harmonious *Houyhnhnms* thro' the nose,
 I'd call thee *Houyhnhnm*, that high-sounding name,
 Thy children's noses all should twang the same.
 So might I find my loving spouse of course,
 Endu'd with all the virtues of a horse.



e,

:

ar?

e,
ne,